

**AD-A256 107**



**RL-TR-92-46**  
**In-House Report**  
**February 1992**



# **RELATIVISTIC DYNAMICS OF A CHARGED SPHERE: UPDATING THE LORENTZ-ABRAHAM MODEL**

**Arthur D. Yaghjian**

*APPROVED FOR PUBLIC RELEASE; DISTRIBUTION UNLIMITED.*

**92-26667**



Rome Laboratory  
Air Force Systems Command  
Griffiss Air Force Base, NY 13441-5700

This report has been reviewed by the Rome Laboratory Public Affairs Office (PA) and is releasable to the National Technical Information Service (NTIS). At NTIS it will be releasable to the general public, including foreign nations.

RL-TR-92-46 has been reviewed and is approved for publication.

APPROVED: *Robert V. McGahan*

ROBERT V. McGAHAN, Chief  
Applied Electromagnetics Division

FOR THE COMMANDER:

*John K. Schindler*

JOHN K. SCHINDLER, Director  
Electromagnetic & Reliability Directorate

If your address has changed or if you wish to be removed from the Rome Laboratory mailing list, or if the addressee is no longer employed by your organization, please notify RL(ERCT) Hanscom AFB MA 01731-5000. This will assist us in maintaining a current mailing list.

Do not return copies of this report unless contractual obligations or notices on a specific document require that it be returned.

# REPORT DOCUMENTATION PAGE

Form Approved  
OMB No. 0704-0188

Public reporting burden for this collection of information is estimated to average 1 hour per response, including the time for reviewing instructions, searching, gathering and maintaining the data needed, and completing and reviewing the collection of information. Send comments regarding this burden estimate or any other aspect of this collection of information, including suggestions for reducing this burden, to Washington Headquarters Services, Directorate for Information Operations and Reports, 1215 Jefferson Davis Highway, Suite 1204, Arlington, VA 22202-4302, and to the Office of Management and Budget, Paperwork Reduction Project (0704-0188), Washington, DC 20503.

<b>1. AGENCY USE ONLY (Leave blank)</b>			<b>2. REPORT DATE</b> FEBRUARY 1992		<b>3. REPORT TYPE AND DATES COVERED</b> Scientific Interim		
<b>4. TITLE AND SUBTITLE</b>  RELATIVISTIC DYNAMICS OF A CHARGED SPHERE: UPDATING THE LORENTZ-ABRAHAM MODEL			<b>5. FUNDING NUMBERS</b>  PE - 62702F PR - 4600 TA - 15 WU - 06				
<b>6. AUTHOR(S)</b>  Arthur D. Yaghjian							
<b>7. PERFORMING ORGANIZATION NAME(S) AND ADDRESS(ES)</b>  Rome Laboratory/ERCT Hanscom AFB, MA 01731-5000			<b>8. PERFORMING ORGANIZATION REPORT NUMBER</b>  RL-TR-92-46				
<b>9. SPONSORING/MONITORING AGENCY NAME(S) AND ADDRESS(ES)</b>  N/A			<b>10. SPONSORING/MONITORING AGENCY REPORT NUMBER</b>  				
<b>11. SUPPLEMENTARY NOTES</b>  RL Project Engineer: Arthur D. Yaghjian/ERCT/617-377-3961							
<b>12a. DISTRIBUTION/AVAILABILITY STATEMENT</b>  Approved for public release; distribution unlimited				<b>12b. DISTRIBUTION CODE</b>			
<b>13. ABSTRACT (Maximum 200 words)</b>  <p>The primary purpose of this work is to determine an equation of motion for the classical Lorentz model of the electron that is consistent with causal solutions to the Maxwell-Lorentz equations, the relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion, and Einstein's mass-energy relation. The work begins by reviewing the contributions of Lorentz, Abraham, Poincaré, and Schott to this century-old problem of finding the equation of motion of an extended electron. Their original derivations, which were based on the Maxwell-Lorentz equations and assumed a zero bare mass, are modified and generalized to obtain a nonzero bare mass and consistent force and power equations of motion. By looking at the Lorentz model of the electron as a charged insulator, general expressions are derived for the binding forces that Poincaré postulated to hold the charge distribution together. A careful examination of the classic Lorentz-Abraham derivation reveals that the self electromagnetic force must be modified during the short time interval after the external force is first applied. The resulting modification to the equation of motion, although slight, eliminates the noncausal pre-acceleration that has plagued the solution to the Lorentz-Abraham equation of motion. As part of the analysis, general momentum and energy relations are derived and interpreted physically for the solutions to the equation of motion, including "hyperbolic" and "runaway" solutions. Also, a stress-momentum-energy tensor that includes the binding, bare-mass, and electromagnetic momentum-energy densities is derived for the charged insulator model of the electron, and an assessment is made of the redefinitions of electromagnetic momentum-energy that have been proposed in the past to obtain a consistent equation of motion.</p>							
<b>14. SUBJECT TERMS</b>  Lorentz Electron Charged Shphere				<b>15. NUMBER OF PAGES</b> 110  <b>16. PRICE CODE</b>			
<b>17. SECURITY CLASSIFICATION OF REPORT</b> UNCLASSIFIED		<b>18. SECURITY CLASSIFICATION OF THIS PAGE</b> UNCLASSIFIED		<b>19. SECURITY CLASSIFICATION OF ABSTRACT</b> UNCLASSIFIED		<b>20. LIMITATION OF ABSTRACT</b> SAR	

# Foreword

This is a remarkable work. Arthur Yaghjian is by training and profession an electrical engineer; but he has a deep interest in fundamental questions usually reserved for physicists. Working largely in isolation he has studied the relevant papers of an enormous literature accumulated over a century. The result is a fresh and novel approach to old problems and to their solution.

Physicists since Lorentz have looked at the problem of the equations of motion of a charged object primarily as a problem for the description of a fundamental particle, typically an electron. Yaghjian considers a macroscopic object, a spherical insulator with a surface charge. He was therefore not tempted to take the point limit, and he thus avoided the pitfalls that have misguided research in this field since Dirac's famous paper of 1938.

Perhaps the author's greatest achievement was the discovery that one does not need to invoke quantum mechanics and the correspondence principle in order to exclude the unphysical solutions (runaway and pre-acceleration solutions). Rather, as he discovered, the derivation of the classical equations of motion from the Maxwell-Lorentz equations is invalid when the time rate of change of the dynamical variables is too large (even in the relativistic case). Therefore, solutions that show such behavior are inconsistent consequences. The classical theory is thus shown to be physically consistent by itself. It is embarrassing—to say the least—that this observation had not been made before.

This work is an apt tribute to the centennial of Lorentz's seminal paper of 1892 in which he first proposed the Lorentz force equation.

Fritz Rohrlich  
Syracuse University

# Preface

This re-examination of the classical model of the electron, introduced by H. A. Lorentz 100 years ago, serves as both a review of the subject and as a context for presenting new material. The new material includes the determination and elimination of the basic cause of the pre-acceleration, and the derivation of the binding forces and total stress-momentum-energy tensor for a charged insulator moving with arbitrary velocity. Most of the work presented here was done while on sabbatical leave as a guest professor at the Electromagnetics Institute of the Technical University of Denmark.

I am indebted to Professor Jesper E. Hansen and the Danish Research Academy for encouraging and supporting the research under Grant No. E880153. I am grateful to Dr. Thorkild B. Hansen for checking a number of the derivations, to Marc G. Cote for helping to prepare the final camera-ready copy of the manuscript, and to Jo-Ann M. Ducharme for typing the initial version of the manuscript.

The final version of the report has benefited greatly from the helpful suggestions and thoughtful review of Professor F. Rohrlich of Syracuse University, and the perceptive comments of Professor T. T. Wu of Harvard University.

Arthur D. Yaghjian  
Concord, Massachusetts  
April 1992

# Contents

<b>1</b>	<b>INTRODUCTION AND SUMMARY OF RESULTS</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>2</b>	<b>LORENTZ-ABRAHAM FORCE AND POWER EQUATIONS</b>	<b>8</b>
2.1	Force Equation of Motion . . . . .	8
2.2	Power Equation of Motion . . . . .	9
<b>3</b>	<b>DERIVATION OF FORCE AND POWER EQUATIONS</b>	<b>12</b>
3.1	General Equations of Motion from Proper-Frame Equations . . . . .	11
<b>4</b>	<b>INTERNAL BINDING FORCES</b>	<b>16</b>
4.1	Poincaré Binding Forces . . . . .	16
4.2	Binding Forces at Arbitrary Velocity . . . . .	19
4.2.1	Electric polarization producing the binding forces . . . . .	23
<b>5</b>	<b>ELECTROMAGNETIC, ELECTROSTATIC, BARE, MEASURED, AND INSULATOR MASSES</b>	<b>26</b>
5.1	Bare Mass in Terms of Electromagnetic and Electrostatic Masses . . . . .	28
5.1.1	Extra momentum-energy in Newton's second law of motion for charged particles . . . . .	30
5.1.2	Reason for Lorentz setting the bare mass zero . . . . .	32
<b>6</b>	<b>TRANSFORMATION AND REDEFINITION OF FORCE-POWER AND MOMENTUM-ENERGY</b>	<b>34</b>
6.1	Transformation of Electromagnetic, Binding, and Bare-Mass Force-Power and Momentum-Energy . . . . .	34
6.1.1	Total stress-momentum-energy tensor for the charged insulator . . . . .	37
6.2	Redefinition of Electromagnetic Momentum and Energy . . . . .	43
<b>7</b>	<b>MOMENTUM AND ENERGY RELATIONS</b>	<b>47</b>
7.1	Hyperbolic and Runaway Motion . . . . .	50
<b>8</b>	<b>SOLUTIONS TO THE EQUATION OF MOTION</b>	<b>52</b>
8.1	Solution to the Equation of Rectilinear Motion . . . . .	53

8.2	Cause and Elimination of the Pre-Acceleration . . . . .	56
8.3	Power Series Solution to Equation of Rectilinear Motion . . . . .	64
8.4	Power Series Solution to General Equation of Motion . . . . .	66
8.4.1	Synchrotron radiation . . . . .	68
8.5	The Finite Difference Equation of Motion . . . . .	70
8.6	Higher Order Terms in the Power Series Solution . . . . .	72
8.7	Renormalization of the Equation of Motion . . . . .	72
<b>APPENDIX A: DERIVATION AND TRANSFORMATION OF SMALL-VELOCITY FORCE AND POWER</b>		<b>76</b>
A.1	Derivation of the Small-Velocity Force and Power . . . . .	77
A.1.1	Derivation of the proper-frame force . . . . .	77
A.1.2	Derivation of the small-velocity power . . . . .	78
A.2	Relativistic Transformation of the Small-Velocity Force and Power . . . . .	80
A.2.1	Relativistic transformation of the proper-frame force . . . . .	80
A.2.2	Relativistic transformation of the small-velocity power . . . . .	81
A.3	Noncovariance of the Power Equation . . . . .	82
<b>APPENDIX B: DERIVATION OF FORCE AND POWER AT ARBITRARY VELOCITY</b>		<b>84</b>
B.1	The $1/a$ Terms of Self Electromagnetic Force and Power . . . . .	84
B.1.1	Evaluation of $1/a$ term of self electromagnetic force . . . . .	85
B.1.2	Evaluation of $1/a$ term of self electromagnetic power . . . . .	88
B.2	Radiation Reaction of Self Electromagnetic Force and Power . . . . .	88
B.2.1	Evaluation of the radiation reaction force . . . . .	89
B.2.2	Evaluation of the radiation reaction power . . . . .	92
<b>APPENDIX C: ELECTRIC AND MAGNETIC FIELDS IN A SPHERICAL SHELL OF CHARGE</b>		<b>93</b>
<b>APPENDIX D: DERIVATION OF THE LINEAR TERMS FOR THE SELF ELECTROMAGNETIC FORCE</b>		<b>95</b>
<b>REFERENCES</b>		<b>99</b>

# Chapter 1

## INTRODUCTION AND SUMMARY OF RESULTS

The primary purpose of this work is to determine an equation of motion for the classical Lorentz model of the electron that is consistent with causal solutions to the Maxwell-Lorentz equations, the relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion, and Einstein's mass-energy relation. (The latter two laws of physics were not discovered until after the original works of Lorentz, Abraham, and Poincaré. The hope of Lorentz and Abraham for deriving the equation of motion of an electron from the self force determined by the Maxwell-Lorentz equations alone was not fully realized.) The work begins by reviewing the contributions of Lorentz, Abraham, Poincaré, and Schott to this century-old problem of finding the equation of motion of an extended electron. Their original derivations, which were based on the Maxwell-Lorentz equations and assumed a zero bare mass, are modified and generalized to obtain a nonzero bare mass and consistent force and power equations of motion. By looking at the Lorentz model of the electron as a charged insulator, general expressions are *derived* for the binding forces that Poincaré *postulated* to hold the charge distribution together. A careful examination of the classic Lorentz-Abraham derivation reveals that the self electromagnetic force must be modified during the short time interval after the external force is first applied. The resulting modification to the equation of motion, although slight, eliminates the noncausal pre-acceleration that has plagued the solution to the Lorentz-Abraham equation of motion. As part of the analysis, general momentum and energy relations are derived and interpreted physically for the solutions to the equation of motion, including "hyperbolic" and "runaway" solutions. Also, a stress-momentum-energy tensor that includes the binding, bare-mass, and electromagnetic momentum-energy densities is derived for the charged insulator model of the electron, and an assessment is made of the redefinitions of electromagnetic momentum-energy that have been proposed in the past to obtain a consistent equation of motion.

Many fine articles have been written on the classical theories of the electron, such as [6,29,36,37,41,56,57], to complement the original works by Lorentz [3], Abraham [2], Poincaré [16], and Schott [13]. However, in returning to the original derivations of Lorentz, Abraham,

Poincaré, and Schott, re-examining them in detail, modifying them when necessary, and supplementing them with the results of special relativity not contained explicitly in the Maxwell-Lorentz equations, it is possible to clarify and resolve a number of the subtle problems that have remained with the classical theory of the Lorentz model of the extended electron.

An underlying motivation to the present analysis is the idea that one can separate the problem of deriving the equation of motion of the extended model of the electron from the question of whether the model approximates an actual electron. One could, in principle, enter the classical laboratory, distribute a charge  $e$  uniformly on the surface of an insulating sphere of radius  $a$ , apply an external electromagnetic field to the charged insulator and observe a causal motion predictable from the relativistically invariant equations of classical physics. Moreover, the short-range dipolar forces binding the excess charge to the surface of the insulator need not be postulated, but should be derivable from the relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion applied to both the charge and insulator, and from the requirement that the charge remain uniformly distributed on the spherical insulator in its proper inertial frame of reference. A summary of the results in each of the succeeding chapters follows.

Chapter 2 introduces the original Lorentz-Abraham force and power equations of motion for Lorentz's relativistically rigid model of the electron moving with arbitrary velocity. Lorentz and Abraham derived their force equation of motion by determining the self electromagnetic force induced by the moving charge distribution upon itself, and setting the sum of the externally applied and self electromagnetic force equal to zero, that is, they assumed a zero "bare" mass. Similarly, they derived their power equation of motion by setting the sum of the externally applied and self electromagnetic power (work done per unit time by the forces on the charge distribution) equal to zero.

To the consternation of Abraham and Lorentz, these two equations of motion were not consistent. In particular, the scalar product of the velocity of the charge center with the self electromagnetic force (force equation of motion) did not equal the self electromagnetic power (power equation of motion). Merely introducing a nonzero bare mass into the equations of motion does not remove this inconsistency between the force and power equations of motion. Moreover, it is shown that the apparent inconsistency between self electromagnetic force and power is not a result of the electromagnetic mass in the equations of motion equaling  $4/3$  the electrostatic mass, nor a necessary consequence of the electromagnetic momentum-energy not transforming like a four-vector. The  $4/3$  factor occurs in both the force and power equations of motion, (2.1) and (2.4), and it was of no concern to Abraham, Lorentz, or Poincaré in their original works which, as mentioned above, appeared before Einstein proposed the mass-energy relationship.

Neither the self electromagnetic force-power nor the momentum-energy transforms as a four-vector. (For this reason, they are referred to herein as force-power and momentum-energy rather than four-force and four-momentum.) However, there are any number of force and power functions that could be added to the electromagnetic momentum and energy that would make the total momentum-energy (call it  $G'$ ) transform like a four-vector, and yet not

satisfy  $dG^i/ds u_i = 0$ , so that the inconsistency between the force and power equations of motion would remain. Conversely, it is possible for the proper-time derivatives of momentum and energy (force-power) to transform as a four-vector and satisfy  $dG^i/ds u_i = 0$  without the momentum-energy  $G^i$  itself transforming like a four-vector. In fact, Poincaré introduced binding forces that removed the inconsistency between the force and power equations of motion, and restored the force-power to a four-vector, without affecting the  $1/3$  factor in these equations or requiring the momentum and energy of the charged sphere to transform as a four-vector.

The apparent inconsistency between the self-electromagnetic force and power is investigated in detail in Chapter 3 by reviewing the Abraham-Lorentz derivation, and rigorously rederiving the electromagnetic force and power for a charge moving with arbitrary velocity. For the Lorentz model of the electron moving with *arbitrary* velocity one finds that the Abraham-Lorentz derivation depends in part on differentiating with respect to time the velocity in the electromagnetic momentum and energy determined for a charge distribution moving with *constant* velocity. Although Lorentz and Abraham give a plausible argument for the validity of this procedure, the first rigorous derivation of the self-electromagnetic force and power for the Lorentz electron moving with arbitrary velocity was given by Schott in 1912, several years after the original derivations of Lorentz and Abraham. Because Schott's rigorous derivation of the electromagnetic force and power, obtained directly from the Liénard-Wiechert potentials for an arbitrarily moving charge, is extremely involved and difficult to repeat, a much simpler, yet rigorous derivation is provided in Appendix B.

It is emphasized in Section 3.1 that the self-electromagnetic force and power are equal to the internal Lorentz force and power densities integrated over the charge-current distribution of the extended electron, and thus one has no *a priori* guarantee that they will obey the same relativistic transformations as an external force and power applied to a point mass. An important consequence of the rigorous derivations of the electromagnetic force and power of the extended electron, with arbitrary velocity, is that the integrated self-electromagnetic force, and thus the Lorentz-Abraham force equation of motion of the extended electron is shown to transform as an external force applied to a point mass. However, the rigorous derivations also reveal that the integrated self-electromagnetic power, and thus the Lorentz-Abraham power equation of motion, for the relativistically rigid model of the extended electron do not transform as the power delivered to a moving point mass. This turns out to be true even when the radius of the charged sphere approaches zero, because the internal fields become singular as the radius approaches zero and the velocity of the charge distribution is not the same at each point on a moving, relativistically rigid shell. Thus, it is not permissible to use the simple point-mass relativistic transformation of power to find the integrated self-electromagnetic power of the extended electron in an arbitrarily moving inertial reference frame from its small-velocity value. (This is unfortunate because the proper-frame and small-velocity values of self-electromagnetic force and power, respectively, are much easier to derive than their arbitrary frame values from a series expansion of the Liénard-Wiechert electric fields; see Appendix A.)

The rigorous derivations of self-electromagnetic force and power in Chapter 3 critically

confirm the discrepancy between the Lorentz-Abraham force and power equations of motion. Chapter 4 introduces a more detailed picture of the Lorentz model of the electron as a charge uniformly distributed on the surface of a nonrotating insulator that remains spherical with radius  $a$  in its proper inertial reference frame. Applying the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion to the surface charge and insulator separately, we prove the remarkable conclusion of Poincaré that the discrepancy between the Lorentz-Abraham force and power equations of motion is caused by the neglect of the short-range dipole forces binding the charge to the surface of the insulator. Even though these short-range dipole forces need not contribute to the total self force or rest energy of formation, they add to the total self power an amount that exactly cancels the discrepancy between the Lorentz-Abraham force and power equations of motion. Moreover, the power equation of motion modified by the addition of the power delivered by the binding forces now transforms relativistically like the power delivered to a point mass. With the addition of Poincaré binding forces, the power equation of motion of the Lorentz model of the electron derives from the Lorentz-Abraham force equation of motion, and no longer needs separate consideration.

Of course, Poincaré did not know what we do today about the nature of these surface forces when he published his results in 1906, so he simply assumed the necessity of "other forces or bonds" that transformed like the electromagnetic forces. Also, Poincaré drew his conclusions from the analysis of the fields and forces of a charged sphere moving with constant velocity; see Section 4.1. The derivation in Section 4.2 from the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion reveals, in addition to the original Poincaré stress, both "inhomogeneous" and "homogeneous" surface stresses that are required to keep the surface charge bound to the insulator moving with arbitrary center velocity. The extra inhomogeneous stress integrates to zero when calculating the total binding force and power. The extra homogeneous binding force and power just equal the negative of the time rate of change of momentum and energy needed to accelerate the mass of the uncharged insulator. It also vanishes when the mass of the uncharged insulator is zero.

The mass of the uncharged insulator should not be confused with the "bare mass" of the surface charge. Today the bare mass should be viewed as simply a mathematically defined mass required to make the Lorentz-Abraham force equation of motion compatible with the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion and the Einstein mass-energy relation. Also, the analysis in Section 4.2 confirms the original results of Poincaré that the forces binding the charge to the insulator remove the inconsistency between the Lorentz-Abraham force and power equations of motion (that is, between self force and power), but do not remove the 1/3 factor multiplying the electrostatic mass in the equations of motion or require the momentum-energy to transform as a four-vector. With the addition of the binding forces, the force-power, but not the momentum-energy, transforms as a four-vector.

Chapter 5 determines the relationships between the various masses (electromagnetic, electrostatic, bare, measured, and insulator masses) involved with the analysis of the classical model of the electron as a charged insulator. Specifically, the Einstein mass-energy relation demands that the measured mass of the charged insulator equals the sum of the electrostatic mass and the mass of the uncharged insulator (which can include any mass due

to gravitational fields and the short-range dipole forces binding the charge to the insulator, if their contribution to the rest energy of formation is not negligible). The relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion then demands that the momentum of the so-called bare mass equals the difference between the momentum of the electromagnetic mass and the electrostatic mass, regardless of the value of the mass of the insulator.

It is the negative bare mass that removes the  $4/3$  factor from the electrostatic mass in the Lorentz-Abraham-Poincaré equation of motion and makes the momentum of the charged insulator compatible with the electrostatic rest energy of formation. With the inclusion of both the bare mass and binding stresses, the momentum-energy as well as force-power transform as four-vectors. Why Lorentz, Abraham, and the general physics community assumed as late as 1915 that the bare mass was zero is explained in Section 5.1.2.

The final result of the analysis of Chapter 5 is an equation of motion (5.12) for a charged insulator compatible with the Maxwell-Lorentz equations, the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion, and the Einstein mass-energy relation. (The possibility, considered by Dirac, of extra momentum-energy terms in the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion for charged particles, and the conditions these terms should satisfy, are discussed in Section 5.1.1.)

Chapter 6 begins by summarizing the transformation properties of the different force-powers and momentum-energies, and deriving a total stress-momentum-energy tensor that accounts for the binding forces and bare mass, as well as the electromagnetic self force for the charged insulator model of the electron. We then consider the redefinitions of electromagnetic momentum-energy that have been proposed to obtain consistent momentum and energy equations of motion without introducing specific binding forces and bare masses. With the exception of the momentum-energy of Schwinger's tensors [20], the redefined momentum-energy densities can be found for the Lorentz model of the electron by multiplying the four-velocity of the center of the extended charge by an invariant function of the electromagnetic field. The total momentum-energy of the charge distribution moving with constant velocity then transforms as a four-vector, and for arbitrary velocity predicts consistent  $1/a$  terms for the self force and self power, that is, consistent  $1/a$  terms in the force and power equations of motion. However, these invariant redefinitions of electromagnetic momentum-energy do not predict the correct radiation reaction terms in the equations of motion.

Schwinger's method [20] consists of writing the force-power density as the divergence of a tensor that depends on the charge-current distribution for charge moving with constant velocity. This charge-current tensor is subtracted from the original electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor, to obtain a divergenceless stress-momentum-energy tensor (when the velocity is constant) and a total momentum-energy that transforms as a four-vector. This method produces the correct radiation reaction terms as well as consistent  $1/a$  terms in the force and power equations of motion for arbitrary velocity. The tensor resulting from this method is ambiguous to within an arbitrary divergenceless tensor. Schwinger concentrates on two tensors which, for a thin shell of charge, are equivalent to the stress-momentum-energy tensor derived for the charged insulator when the value of the mass of the insulator is chosen equal to zero and  $m_e/3$ .

None of these methods of redefining the electromagnetic momentum-energy require the removal of the 4/3 factor multiplying the electrostatic mass in the original equations of motion. They have the drawback for the Lorentz model of the electron of requiring unknown self force and power (electromagnetic or otherwise) that do not equal the Lorentz force and power. Also, none of the redefined stress-momentum-energy tensors recover the secondary binding forces necessary to hold the accelerating charge to the surface of the insulator. Thus, redefining the electromagnetic momentum-energy seems an unattractive alternative to the deterministic binding forces, bare mass and total stress-momentum-energy tensor derived for the charged-insulator model of the extended electron.

In Chapter 7, general expressions for the momentum and energy of the moving charge are derived from the equation of motion. The reversible kinetic momentum-energy, the reversible Schott acceleration momentum-energy, and the irreversible radiation momentum-energy are separated in both three and four-vector notation. After the application of an external force to the charged particle, all the momentum-energy that has been supplied by the external force has been converted entirely to kinetic and radiated momentum-energy. However, while the external force is being applied, the momentum-energy is converted to Schott acceleration momentum-energy, as well as kinetic and radiated momentum-energy.

An understanding of the "Schott acceleration momentum-energy" as reactive momentum-energy may be gained by looking at time harmonic motion and comparing the energy of the oscillating charge with the reactive energy of an antenna. It is also confirmed that the conservation of momentum-energy is not violated by a charge in hyperbolic motion (relativistically uniform acceleration), or by the homogeneous runaway solutions to the equation of motion.

Chapter 8 begins by solving the equation of motion for the extended charge in rectilinear motion. When one neglects the higher order terms (in radius  $a$ ) of the equation of motion, one obtains the well-known pre-acceleration solution under the two asymptotic conditions that the acceleration approaches zero in the distant future (when the external force approaches zero in the distant future) and the velocity approaches zero in the remote past. It is shown that this pre-acceleration solution, which violates causality, is not a strictly valid solution to the equation of motion of the extended charge because the pre-acceleration does not satisfy the requirement that the neglected higher order terms in  $a$  are negligible. Unfortunately, when higher order terms in the Lorentz-Abraham-Poincaré equation of motion are retained, the noncausal pre-acceleration remains; its time dependence merely changes.

In Section 8.2 the root cause of the noncausal pre-acceleration solution is traced to the assumption in the classical derivation of the self-electromagnetic force that the position, velocity, and acceleration of each element of charge at the retarded time can be expanded in a Taylor series about the present time. When the external force, assumed zero for all time less than zero and analytic for all time greater than zero, is applied at  $t = 0$ , these Taylor series expansions are invalid during the initial short time interval light takes to traverse the charge distribution ( $0 < t < 2a/c$ ). When the derivation of the self-force is done properly near  $t = 0$ , the radiation reaction (and each higher order term) in the equation of motion is multiplied by a correction function that increases monotonically from zero to

unity during the time interval approximately equal to  $2a/c$  after the external force is applied. *Remarkably, this small correction in the equation of motion removes entirely the noncausal pre-acceleration from the solution to the equation of motion, without introducing spurious behavior at  $t = 0$ , or destroying the covariance of the equation of motion.* It also ensures that the initial acceleration of the charge equals the initially applied external force divided by the mass.

If one is not concerned with the proper behavior of the solution to the equation of motion during the time immediately after the external force is first applied, one can obtain a convenient power series solution to the equation of motion. The first two terms of this power series solution are found in Section 8.3 for the rectilinear equation of motion, and in Section 8.4 for the general equation of motion of the extended charge. For the special case of a charge moving in a uniform magnetic field, the first two terms reduce to the perturbation solution obtained for the synchrotron radiation from high energy electrons. The synchrotron solution emerges in a simple form convenient for determining the trajectory of the electron, as well as its change in energy and radius of curvature per unit time.

Section 8.5 considers the finite difference equation of motion of the extended electron that has been proposed as an alternative to the differential equation of motion. We find that there is little justification to accept the finite difference equation as a valid equation of motion because it neglects all nonlinear terms (in the proper frame of the charge) involving products of the time derivatives of the velocity, and retains a homogeneous runaway solution that leads to pre-acceleration.

Chapter 8 ends by considering the possibility of determining explicitly the third and higher order terms in the power series solution to the equation of motion. For the electron, these third and higher order terms produce a change that is less than the error caused by ignoring quantum effects [53]. Renormalizing the mass in the equation of motion to a finite value as the radius of the charge approaches zero eliminates the third and higher order terms, but sacrifices a detailed understanding of the internal physics of the charge distribution. The renormalized version of the corrected equation of motion differs from the Lorentz-Dirac renormalized equation of motion for the point charge by the correction function that multiplies the radiation reaction. As in the case of the extended charge, this slight correction to the Lorentz-Dirac equation of motion of the point charge eliminates the non-causal pre-acceleration. As a consequence of the renormalization, however, the acceleration times the renormalized mass of the point charge, just after the external force is applied, does not equal the initial value of the external force, as it does for the extended charge.

## Chapter 2

# LORENTZ-ABRAHAM FORCE AND POWER EQUATIONS

### 2.1 Force Equation of Motion

Toward the end of the nineteenth century Lorentz modeled the electron by a spherical shell of uniform surface charge density and set about the difficult task of deriving the equation of motion of this electron model by determining, from Maxwell's equations and the Lorentz force law, the retarded self electromagnetic force that the fields of the accelerating charge distribution exert upon the charge itself [1]. With the help of Abraham, a highly successful theory of the moving electron model was completed by the early 1900's [2,3]. Before Einstein's papers [4,5] on special relativity appeared in 1905, they had derived the following force equation of motion

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a c^2} \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma \mathbf{u}) - \frac{e^2 \gamma^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} \left[ \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} \right\} + O(a), \quad (2.1)$$

$$\gamma \equiv \left(1 - u^2/c^2\right)^{-\frac{1}{2}}, \quad O(a^m) \equiv \sum_{n=m}^{\infty} \alpha_n(\mathbf{u}) a^n$$

for a "relativistically rigid" spherical shell of total charge  $e$  and radius  $a$ , moving (without rotation) with arbitrary center velocity,  $\mathbf{u} = \mathbf{u}(t)$ , and externally applied force  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t)$ . The speed of light and permittivity in free space are denoted by  $c$  and  $\epsilon_0$ , respectively. The rationalized mksA international system of units is used throughout, and dots over the velocity denote differentiation with respect to time.

"Relativistically rigid" refers to the particular model of the electron, proposed originally by Lorentz, that remains spherical in its proper (instantaneous rest) frame, and in an arbitrary inertial frame is contracted in the direction of velocity to an oblate spheroid with minor axis equal to  $2a/\gamma$ . Lorentz, however, used the word "deformable" to refer to this model of

the electron. (Even a relativistically rigid finite body cannot strictly exist because it would transmit motion instantaneously throughout its finite volume. Nonetheless, one makes the assumption of relativistically “rigid motion” to avoid the possibility of exciting vibrational modes within the extended model of the electron [6, pp.131–132].)

Likewise, “without rotation” means that the angular velocity of each point on the sphere is zero in its proper frame of reference.

The derivation of the differential equation of motion (2.1) requires that the velocity and externally applied force be analytic functions of time. This is discussed in Chapter 8 when dealing with the problem of pre-acceleration.

The infinite summation of order  $a$  in the equation of motion (2.1) goes to zero as  $a$  approaches zero. The inequalities (8.21) in Section 8.2 give the conditions on the time derivatives of the velocity of the charge for neglecting the  $O(a)$  terms in (2.1). Namely, it is sufficient that the fractional changes in the second and higher time derivatives of velocity be small during the time it takes light to travel across the charge distribution. Alternatively, the inequalities (8.47) combine with (8.46) in Section 8.3 to show that the  $O(a)$  terms in (2.1) are negligible if the fractional changes in the first and higher time derivatives of the externally applied force are small during the time light traverses the charge.

The right side of (2.1) is the negative of the self electromagnetic force  $\mathbf{F}_{ee}$  determined by Lorentz and Abraham for the moving charge distribution. Thus (2.1) expresses Newton’s second law of motion for the shell of charge when the unknown “bare” mass, or “material” mass as Lorentz called it, in Newton’s second law of motion is set equal to zero. (With the acceptance of special relativity [4] and in particular the Einstein mass-energy equivalence relation [5], it is no longer valid to assume, as did Lorentz and Abraham, that the bare mass is independent of the electrostatic energy of formation, that is, independent of the total charge  $e$  and radius  $a$ . We shall return in Chapter 5 to the subject of the bare mass and the question of why Lorentz *et al.* believed the bare mass of the electron was negligible.)

Remarkably, the special relativistic factor  $\gamma$  in the time rate of change of momentum (first term on the right side of (2.1)) and the radiation reaction self force with coefficient  $e^2/6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3$  that doesn’t depend on the size or shape of the charge (second term on the right side of (2.1)) were both correctly revealed, so that (2.1) is invariant to a relativistic transformation from one inertial reference frame to another. That is, both sides of the force equation of motion (2.1) transform covariantly. Moreover, one could choose the radius  $a$  such that the inertial electromagnetic rest mass

$$m_{ee} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \quad (2.2)$$

equaled the measured rest mass of the electron.

## 2.2 Power Equation of Motion

As long as Lorentz and Abraham limited themselves to the derivation of the force equation of motion (2.1), they saw no inconsistencies in the Lorentz model of the electron. Lorentz was unconcerned with the terms of order  $a$  that are neglected in the self force because he

assumed the classical radius of the electron was both realistic and small enough that only the "next term of the series [the radiation reaction term in (2.1)] makes itself felt" [3, sec. 37].

Lorentz and Abraham were also unconcerned with the electromagnetic mass  $m_{el}$  in (2.1) equaling  $4/3$  the electrostatic mass  $m_{es}$ , defined as the energy of formation of the spherical charge divided by  $c^2$

$$m_{es} = \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \quad (2.3)$$

because they derived the equation of motion (2.1) before Einstein's 1905 papers on relativistic electrodynamics [4] and the mass-energy relation [5]. In neither of the original editions of their books [2,3] do they mention the  $4/3$  factor in the inertial electromagnetic mass of (2.1) being incompatible with the electrostatic energy of formation, or, conversely, the energy of formation of the electron having to equal the inertial electromagnetic mass times  $c^2$  [7].

In 1904, however, Abraham [8], [2, secs. 15 and 22], [3, sec. 180] derived the following power equation of motion for the Lorentz relativistically rigid model of the electron by determining from Maxwell's equations the time rate of change of work done by the internal electromagnetic forces

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \gamma - \frac{1}{4\gamma} \right) - \frac{e^2 \gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a). \quad (2.4)$$

As Abraham and Lorentz pointed out, the power equation of motion (2.4) is not consistent with the force equation of motion (2.1). Specifically, taking the scalar product of the center velocity  $\mathbf{u}$  with equation (2.1) gives

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d\gamma}{dt} - \frac{e^2 \gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a) \quad (2.5)$$

which differs from (2.4) by the term

$$- \frac{e^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} \right). \quad (2.6)$$

This is the discrepancy between the force equation of motion and the power equation of motion for the Lorentz model that concerned Abraham and Lorentz; namely, that the scalar product of  $\mathbf{u}$  with the time rate of change of the electromagnetic momentum did not equal the time rate of change of the work done by the internal electromagnetic forces.

Unlike the force equation of motion (2.1), the left and right sides of the power equation of motion (2.4) do not transform covariantly; see Appendix A. Moreover, neither the force-power on the right sides of (2.1) and (2.4) nor the momentum-energy transforms as a four-vector; see Section 6.1. (Lorentz and Abraham did not mention and were probably not aware of this noncovariance because these equations were discussed outside the general framework and without the correct velocity transformations of special relativity; compare [9] with [4].)

After the derivation of (2.4), they still saw no problem with the 4/3 factor in the inertial electromagnetic mass, nor with the conventional electromagnetic momentum-energy *per se* (before taking the time derivative) failing to transform as a relativistic four-vector. Moreover, if one rewrites (2.1) in four-vector notation to obtain

$$F_{ext}^i = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{du^i}{ds} - \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0} \left( \frac{d^2 u^i}{ds^2} + u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} \right) + O(a) \quad (2.7)$$

one recovers equation (2.1) and (2.5) from (2.7) and misses entirely the discrepancy introduced by the power equation of motion (2.4) derived from Maxwell's equations by Abraham. (If the mass in (2.7) is "renormalized" to a finite value as the radius of the charge approaches zero, the  $O(a)$  terms vanish and (2.7) becomes identical to the Lorentz-Dirac equation of motion [10,11]; see Section 8.7. Early use of the four-vector notation for the radiation reaction part of the equation of motion (2.7) can be found in Pauli's article on relativity theory [6, sec. 32]. Herein we use the four-vector notation of Panofsky and Phillips [11], who normalized the four-velocity to be dimensionless.)

## Chapter 3

# DERIVATION OF FORCE AND POWER EQUATIONS

The inconsistency between the power and force equations of motion, (2.4) and (2.1) or (2.5), is so surprising that one is tempted to question the Abraham-Lorentz derivation ([8], [2, secs. 15 and 22], [3, sec. 180]) of (2.1) and (2.4). Thus, let us take a careful look at their method of derivation.

The right side of (2.1) is the negative of the self electromagnetic force,  $\mathbf{F}_{el}$ , and the right side of (2.4) is the negative of the work done per unit time,  $P_{el}$ , by the internal electromagnetic forces on the moving shell of charge; specifically

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \int_{charge} \rho(\mathbf{r}, t) [\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) \times \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)] dV = -\frac{d}{dt} \epsilon_0 \int_{all \ space} \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} dV \quad (3.1)$$

$$P_{el}(t) = \int_{charge} \rho(\mathbf{r}, t) \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) dV = -\frac{d}{dt} \frac{\epsilon_0}{2} \int_{all \ space} (E^2 + c^2 B^2) dV \quad (3.2)$$

where  $\rho(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  are the density and velocity of the charge distribution in the shell, and  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  are the electric and magnetic fields produced by this moving charge distribution. The magnetic field does not appear in the first integral of (3.2) because the magnetic force is perpendicular to the velocity.

The second equations in (3.1) and (3.2) are, of course, identities derived from Maxwell's equations, assuming there are no radiation fields beyond a finite distance from the charge distribution [12, sec. 2.5, eq.(25) and sec. 2.19, eq.(6)].

For the Lorentz relativistically rigid model of the electron, the charge density and velocity of each part of the shell cannot be the same for an arbitrarily moving shell if the shell is to maintain its spherical shape and uniform charge density in its proper frame of reference (inertial frame at rest instantaneously with respect to the center of the electron). In particular, the relativistic contraction of the moving Lorentz model of the electron, from a spherical to an oblate spheroidal shell, demands that the velocity of its charge distribution cannot be uniformly equal (except in the proper frame) to the velocity of the center of the shell denoted simply by  $\mathbf{u} = \mathbf{u}(t)$  in our previous equations (see Appendix A). If  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  did

not depend on the position  $\mathbf{r}$  within the shell, as in Abraham's noncontracting (nonrelativistically rigid) model of the electron [2],  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  could be brought outside the charge integrals in (3.1) and (3.2),  $P_{el}$  would equal  $\mathbf{F}_{el} \cdot \mathbf{u}$ , and the discrepancy (2.6) between (2.4) and (2.5) or (2.1) would vanish. Such a model is unrealistic because it would have a single preferred inertial frame of reference in which it were spherical (with fixed radius  $a$ ) and its major axis would stretch to an infinite length in its proper frame when its velocity with respect to the preferred frame approached the speed of light.

Still we can ask if the variable velocity in the charge integrals of (3.1) and (3.2) for the Lorentz model of the electron actually produces the discrepancy (2.6) between equations (2.4) and (2.5) or (2.1). For a charge with velocity other than zero, both Abraham and Lorentz derived the first terms on the right sides of (2.1) and (2.4), the terms in question, not from the charge integrals in (3.1) and (3.2) but by evaluating the momentum and energy integrals (second integrals) in (3.1) and (3.2) for a charge moving with constant velocity with respect to time, then differentiating the resulting functions of velocity with respect to time [2, sec. 22], [3, sec. 180]. We know that falsely setting the charge velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  independent of  $\mathbf{r}$  in the first integrals of (3.1) and (3.2) eliminates the discrepancy (2.6). Is it really justifiable, as Lorentz [3, sec. 183] and Abraham [2, sec. 23] argue, to assume a charge velocity constant in time in the second integrals of (3.1) and (3.2) to derive the first terms of (2.1) and (2.4), the terms that produce the discrepancy (2.6)?

Apparently, this question was not decided with certainty until the work of Schott [13] who derived both the force and power equations of motion, (2.1) and (2.4), by evaluating directly the integrals in (3.1) and (3.2) over the charge distribution for the Lorentz model of the electron moving (without rotation) with arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ . In particular, his evaluation of the charge integral in (3.2) indeed yielded the power equation of motion (2.4) to prove that the discrepancy (2.6) with the force equation of motion (2.1) actually existed. In fact, Schott's book appears to be the first reference in which either the force or power equation of motion can be found in the general form of (2.1) and (2.4). To obtain these equations from the work of Lorentz and Abraham, one has to piece together the results of a number of their papers or various sections of their books (for example, secs. 28, 32, 37, 179, and 180 of [3] plus secs. 15 and 22 of [2]).

Schott's derivations of the force and power equations of motion, (2.1) and (2.4), from the charge integrals of (3.1) and (3.2) involve extremely tedious manipulations of the double integrations of the Liénard-Wiechert potentials for an arbitrarily moving charge distribution. They are so involved that Schott's rigorous approach to the analysis of the Lorentz model of the electron has not appeared or been repeated, as far as I am aware, in any subsequent review or textbook. Page [14] also derives the force equation of motion (2.1) by evaluating and integrating directly the self electromagnetic fields over the charge distribution. However, Page's derivation does not show explicitly the variation in velocity of the charge distribution throughout the shell, and thus it cannot be used to derive the power equation of motion (2.4).

### 3.1 General Equations of Motion from Proper-Frame Equations

Lorentz also derived the force equation of motion from the charge integral for electromagnetic force in (3.1) by means of a double integral of the Liénard-Wiechert potentials, but only in the proper frame of the electron where the velocity of the charge is zero and the derivation simplifies greatly to yield the well-known result [3,11] (derived in Appendix A)

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a), \quad u = 0 \quad (3.3)$$

to which the general force equation of motion reduces when the velocity  $\mathbf{u}$  in (2.1) is set equal to zero (or when  $(u/c)^2 \ll 1$ ).

For a velocity much less than the speed of light, a derivation performed in Appendix A, similar to Lorentz's derivation of (3.3), but applied to the charge integral for electromagnetic power in (3.2), yields the small-velocity power equation of motion

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \frac{5\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a), \quad \left(\frac{u}{c}\right)^2 \ll 1 \quad (3.4)$$

to which the general power equation of motion (2.4) reduces when only the first order terms in  $u/c$  are retained. Note once again that the scalar product of  $\mathbf{u}$  with the force equation (3.3) does not yield the power equation (3.4). Section A.1.2 of Appendix A shows explicitly that the variation of the velocity over the charge distribution, even for  $(u/c)^2 \ll 1$ , must be taken into account to derive the correct expression (3.4) for the small-velocity electromagnetic power.

Now equations (3.3) and (3.4) raise an important question. Since the force and power equations of motion, (3.3) and (3.4), are derived rigorously from (3.1) and (3.2) for  $\mathbf{u}$  approaching zero, why not simply apply the relativistic transformation to the velocity, its time derivatives, and the external force in (3.3) and (3.4) to obtain the general equations of motion (2.1) and (2.4) in an arbitrary frame. Thereby, one would avoid the difficult evaluation of the self force and power directly from (3.1) and (3.2) for a relativistically rigid shell of charge moving with arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ .

Indeed a relativistic transformation of  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$ ,  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$  and  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}$  in the proper-frame force equation of motion (3.3) produces the general force equation of motion (2.1) [15,6]. However, the same relativistic transformations applied to (3.4) produce the equation (see Appendix A)

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \frac{5\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d\gamma}{dt} - \frac{\epsilon^2\gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a) \quad (3.5)$$

which does not agree with either the general power equation of motion (2.4) or the equation (2.5) obtained from the scalar product of  $\mathbf{u}$  with the force equation of motion (2.1).

This apparent paradox is explained by returning to (3.1) and (3.2). Since the self force  $\mathbf{F}_{self}$  and self power  $P_{self}$  in (3.1) and (3.2) are quantities obtained by integrating over a finite

distribution of charge and are not the force and power applied to a point mass, it is not valid to apply the point relativistic transformations of force and center velocity (and derivatives of velocity) to determine the general values of the integrals in (3.1) and (3.2) from their proper-frame or small-velocity values. For the force equation of motion, the integrated self force (3.1) maintains the transformation properties of a point force, and thus the point relativistic transformations can still be applied to obtain the general integrated self force (3.1) in an arbitrary inertial frame from its proper-frame value on the right side of (3.3). (Unfortunately, one proves this fact by performing the difficult evaluation of (3.1) in the arbitrary inertial frame.) For the power equation of motion, however, the integrated power (3.2) does not transform as the time rate of change of energy of a moving point mass (see Appendix A), even as the radius of the charged shell approaches zero, and thus the point relativistic transformations applied to the small-velocity power (right side of (3.1) as  $u \rightarrow 0$ ) do not give the correct value of the power in an arbitrary inertial frame (right side of (2.4)).

From the viewpoint of the electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor (discussed in Chapter 6), it is not surprising that the power equation of motion does not transform covariantly, because the electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor of a charged shell is not divergenceless and the electromagnetic momentum-energy does not transform as a four-vector.

In summary, then, since the point relativistic transformations do not necessarily apply to an integrated force or power (and the electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor is not divergenceless), it is not mathematically rigorous to use these transformations to find the integrated self force and power, (3.1) and (3.2), in an arbitrarily moving inertial reference frame from their proper-frame or small-velocity expressions (3.3) and (3.4). Moreover, as explained in Section 3, the classic Lorentz-Abraham derivation of (2.1) and (2.4) for arbitrary  $\mathbf{u}$  also lacks rigor because it depends upon the evaluation of the momentum and energy of a shell of charge moving with constant, rather than arbitrary time varying velocity. Thus, it appears that Schott's book [13] contains the only rigorous derivation to date of both the force equation of motion (2.1) and the power equation of motion (2.4).

Since this highly commendable derivation by Schott is also extremely tedious and difficult to repeat or check, a much shorter, simpler, yet rigorous derivation of the self electromagnetic force and power is given in Appendix B by applying the relativistic transformations of the electromagnetic fields at each point within the arbitrarily moving shell of charge before performing the integrations in (3.1) and (3.2). (All these derivations depend upon expanding the position, velocity, and acceleration of each element of the charge at the retarded time in a series about the present time. When the external force is applied at  $t = 0$ , having been zero for  $t < 0$ , Section 8.2 shows that these series expansions must be modified slightly near  $t = 0$ . This slight modification eliminates the noncausal pre-acceleration that plagues the solution to the unmodified equation of motion; see Chapter 8.)

# Chapter 4

## INTERNAL BINDING FORCES

In Appendix B, we have critically confirmed the evaluation of the self electromagnetic force and power, (3.1) and (3.2), leading to the force and power equations of motion (2.1) and (2.4). Yet (2.1) and (2.4) are inconsistent, since taking the scalar product of  $\mathbf{u}$  with (2.1) gives (2.5), which differs from (2.4) by the term (2.6). Not only the self electromagnetic momentum-energy but also the self electromagnetic force-power fails to transform as a four-vector. What has gone wrong?

To see clearly the problem and its resolution, it helps to divorce the analysis of the moving spherical shell of charge from the question of whether it models the electron. The analysis is based entirely upon classical fields, forces, and charges, and the extent to which it describes the internal structure of the electron is irrelevant to the question of the inconsistency between the force equation of motion (2.1) and the power equation of motion (2.4). We could enter our classical laboratory, distribute a charge uniformly on the surface of an arbitrarily small, massless (or nearly massless), relativistically “rigid”, insulating sphere, accelerate this charged sphere, and, presumably, get consistent results between the force that is required to accelerate the sphere and the power delivered to the sphere.

### 4.1 Poincaré Binding Forces

Poincaré visualized such a model in his 1906 paper on the dynamics of the electron [16]. (Actually, Poincaré [16, sec. 6] mentions the charge distributed on a conductor rather than an insulator. We choose the insulator model to avoid the possibility of the charge redistributing itself when the sphere moves.) He argued that the only way the charge could remain on the sphere was for there to exist binding forces exerted on the charge by the insulator that would exactly cancel the repulsive portion of the electromagnetic forces. These internal binding forces are not optional, they are necessary in a stable classical Lorentz model. They are the short-range dipole forces that actually exist at the surface of the insulator to hold the excess charge to the surface. Although Poincaré did not have today’s knowledge of the nature of the internal binding forces, he assumed they existed. To quote the English translation of Poincaré, “Therefore it is indeed necessary to assume [in the Lorentz model] that in addition

to electromagnetic forces [of the excess charge alone], there are other forces or bonds" [16, sec. 1].

Thus the total force exerted on the charge in both the force and power equations of motion, (2.1) and (2.4), must include these internal binding forces (which we know today are also electromagnetic in origin) as well as the internal electromagnetic forces of the excess charge.

For a stationary charged sphere, as Poincaré explained, the binding forces exerted by the relativistically rigid insulator on the excess charge must be equal and opposite the repulsive electromagnetic forces produced by the excess charge distribution. However, in order to include the binding forces in the force and power equations of motion, one has to know the value of the binding forces for an arbitrarily moving shell of charge. Poincaré determined the internal binding forces on a moving shell by assuming a "postulate of relativity", namely that the "impossibility of experimentally demonstrating the absolute movement of the earth would be a general law of nature"; and, in particular, hypothesized with Lorentz [9, sec. 8] that the internal forces in the Lorentz model would obey the same transformations that Maxwell's equations implied for the electromagnetic forces [16, Introduction]. (Poincaré did not have the benefit of Einstein's relativity papers [4.5] when he submitted his paper [16] in July 1905, or the knowledge that the binding forces were short-range dipole forces of electromagnetic origin.)

As a consequence of this latter hypothesis, Poincaré drew a startling conclusion. The internal binding forces that canceled the internal self electrostatic forces of the excess charge on the sphere at rest, when transformed to a moving shell, *would not* contribute to the total self force on the moving charge but *would* contribute to the total time rate of change of energy (power) delivered to the charge in the Lorentz model of the moving charge. Specifically, when Poincaré assumed with Lorentz that the spherical shell compressed to the shape of an oblate spheroid in the direction of its velocity by a factor of  $\sqrt{1 - u^2/c^2}$ , the time rate of change of the binding self energy just canceled the discrepancy (2.6) in the power equation of motion (2.4).

To see how Poincaré arrived at this remarkable result, begin with the electrostatic force per unit surface charge

$$\mathbf{f}_{\epsilon}^0 = \frac{\epsilon}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \quad (4.1)$$

for a stationary sphere of radius  $a$  and total charge  $\epsilon$ . The binding force per unit charge required to hold the charge on the stationary sphere is then given by the negative of  $\mathbf{f}_{\epsilon}^0$  or

$$\mathbf{f}_b^0 = \frac{-\epsilon}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}}. \quad (4.2)$$

Now let the charged sphere move with a constant velocity  $\mathbf{u}$  and contract in the direction of  $\mathbf{u}$  to an oblate spheroid with minor axis equal to  $a\sqrt{1 - u^2/c^2} = a/\gamma$ . The Lorentz force law and Maxwell's equations applied to this moving oblate spheroid predict that the electrostatic force per unit charge in (4.1) and thus the binding force per unit charge in (4.2) transforms to

$$\mathbf{f}_b = \mathbf{f}_{\parallel}^0 + \mathbf{f}_{\perp}^0 / \gamma \quad (4.3)$$

where the subscripts,  $\parallel$  and  $\perp$ , refer to the three-vector components parallel and perp. to the velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ . The transformed binding force in (4.3) is directed along the normal into the surface of the oblate spheroid.

The binding force per unit charge (4.3) integrated over the surface charge of the oblate spheroid, because of its symmetry, gives a total binding force  $\mathbf{F}_b$  equal to zero as in the case of the stationary sphere, that is

$$\mathbf{F}_b = \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_b d\epsilon = \int_{charge} \left( \mathbf{f}_{b\parallel}^0 + \mathbf{f}_{b\perp}^0 / \gamma \right) d\epsilon = 0 . \quad (4.4)$$

However, the work taken by the binding forces from the charge distribution as the charge accelerates from zero to velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ , if we can assume (4.3) is valid for the accelerating charge as well as the charge moving with constant velocity, would be

$$W_b = - \int_{charge} \left[ \int_{a \cos \theta}^{a \frac{\cos \theta}{\gamma}} \mathbf{f}_b \cdot d\mathbf{r}_\parallel \right] d\epsilon = - \int_{charge} \left[ \int_{a \cos \theta}^{a \frac{\cos \theta}{\gamma}} \mathbf{f}_b^0 \cdot d\mathbf{r}_\parallel \right] d\epsilon \quad (4.5)$$

where  $\theta$  is the angle between the position vector  $\mathbf{r}$  to the element of charge  $d\epsilon$  and the velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ . The charge element  $d\epsilon$  can be expressed as the product of the surface charge density on the sphere ( $\epsilon / 4\pi a^2$ ) and the projection of the surface area element of the sphere onto the plane perpendicular to  $\mathbf{u}$

$$d\epsilon = \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi a^2} \frac{dA_\perp}{\cos \theta} . \quad (4.6)$$

From (4.2), the integrand of (4.5) can be rewritten as

$$\mathbf{f}_b^0 \cdot d\mathbf{r}_\parallel = \frac{-\epsilon}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a^2} \cos \theta d\mathbf{r}_\parallel . \quad (4.7)$$

Substitution of (4.6) and (4.7) into (4.5) gives

$$W_b = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} \int_{sphere} \left[ \int_{a \cos \theta}^{a \frac{\cos \theta}{\gamma}} dr_\parallel \right] dA_\perp = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} \int_{sphere} dV . \quad (4.8)$$

or

$$W_b = \frac{\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} - 1 \right) . \quad (4.9)$$

Equations (4.8) and (4.9) reveal that the work taken by the internal binding forces as the spherical charge distribution accelerates and contracts to the shape of an oblate spheroid is the same as the work taken by a constant pressure,  $\epsilon^2 / 32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4$ , on a sphere that is compressed to an oblate spheroid. In the words of the English translation of Poincaré, "I have attempted to determine this force, and I found that it can be compared to a constant external pressure acting on the deformable and compressible electron, the work of which is proportional to the variations of the volume of this electron" [16, Introduction].

The negative of the time derivative of (4.9) determines the work done per unit time,  $P_b$ , by the internal binding forces on the moving charge

$$P_b = \frac{-e^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} \right) \quad (4.10)$$

that must be subtracted from the right side of the power equation of motion (2.4). Comparing (4.10) with (2.6), we see, as Poincaré did, that the time rate of change of the work done on the charge by the binding force required to keep the charge on the insulator just cancels the discrepancy (2.6) in power between the power equation of motion (2.4) and the force equation of motion (2.1). As (4.4) shows, the Poincaré binding forces do not alter, however, the total force on the charge distribution, *and thus the force equation of motion (2.1), including the 4/3 factor multiplying the electrostatic mass (2.3), remains unaffected by the Poincaré binding forces. Neither does the power (4.10) delivered by the Poincaré binding forces remove the 4/3 factor from the power equation of motion (2.4), nor do these binding forces change the rest energy of the charged sphere because  $W_b$  in (4.9) vanishes when  $\dot{u}$  is zero.*

## 4.2 Binding Forces at Arbitrary Velocity

The formulation and integrations of the Poincaré binding forces in the previous section are based on the fields and forces of charges in uniform motion. It is uncertain that these results obtained assuming a constant velocity are valid for a shell of charge moving with arbitrary velocity, especially when taking the time derivative of (4.9) to determine the contribution (4.10) of the internal binding forces to the power equation of motion. Thus, we shall derive the molecular binding forces needed to keep the charge on an insulator moving with arbitrary velocity, assuming that the charge remains uniformly distributed on the spherical insulator in its proper inertial frame of reference. (Incidentally, the question raised by Abraham and Lorentz [3, sec. 182] of what keeps the electron in *stable* equilibrium can be answered for the charged insulator model as the nonclassical molecular energy configurations keeping the insulating material “rigid” in its proper frame; see Section 4.2.1.)

Consider the shell of total charge  $e$  in its proper frame as a uniform distribution of volume charge density located between the radius  $a$  and  $a+\delta$ , where  $\delta$  is the limitingly small thickness of the spherical shell (see Fig. 1). At the one instant of time  $t$  in its proper frame the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  of the charge at every position  $\mathbf{r}$  within the shell is zero, but the acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and higher time derivatives of velocity are not necessarily zero nor independent of position  $\mathbf{r}$  within the shell.

In Appendix C we determine the internal electric and magnetic fields in the proper frame of the accelerating shell of charge, and in particular find the self electromagnetic force per unit charge within the shell to equal

$$\mathbf{f}_{ef}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{e}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \left[ \frac{(r-a)}{\delta a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} - \frac{2\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{3ac^2} + \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + \frac{4}{5c^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \cdot \left( \dot{\mathbf{u}}\dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{1}{3} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 \mathbf{I} \right) \right] + O(a), \quad u = 0. \quad (4.11)$$

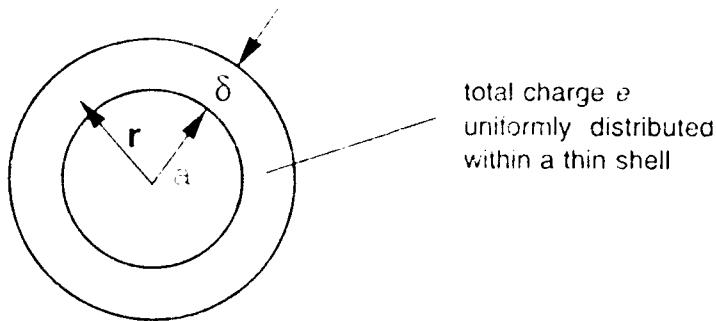


Figure 1. Lorentz model of the electron viewed in its proper frame  
 $(\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) = 0, \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t), \ddot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t) \dots \neq 0)$ .

(In (4.11), as throughout, when  $\mathbf{u}$  and its time derivatives are written without the explicit functional dependence  $(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , they refer to the velocity and its time derivatives of the center of the shell.)

The force on any volume element of charge in the shell is the sum of the externally applied force, the internal electromagnetic force, and the internal binding force on that element. From Newton's second law of motion, we assume the sum of these three forces equals an unknown "bare" mass of that charge element multiplied by the acceleration (see Section 5.1). Specifically

$$\mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{f}_{el}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{M_0}{\epsilon} \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t), \quad u = 0 \quad (4.12)$$

where  $\mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ ,  $\mathbf{f}_{el}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , and  $\mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t)$  are the external, internal self electromagnetic, and internal binding forces per unit charge, respectively, at the position  $\mathbf{r}$  in the shell at the instant of time  $t$  in the proper frame ( $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{u}(t) = 0$ ).

The so-called bare mass  $M_0$ , which Lorentz set equal to zero, should not be associated with the uncharged mass of the insulator on which the charge is placed. In principle, the mass of the insulator can be made negligible, but  $M_0$  on the right side of (4.12) is dependent upon the charge despite its traditional label as "bare" mass. The following derivation shows that the binding force is independent of the value of the bare mass  $M_0$ . (The determination of the mass  $M_0$  and the reason Lorentz thought it was negligible are discussed in Section 5.1 below.)

In (4.12) we assume the bare mass  $M_0$  of the charge is uniformly distributed with the charge in its proper frame so that the bare mass per unit charge at each point in the spherical shell is  $M_0/\epsilon$ . Similarly, we shall assume that the variation of the external force is negligible over the charge distribution so that it is applied uniformly (to order  $a$ ) throughout the proper-frame shell, i.e.

$$\mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t)}{\epsilon} + O(a). \quad (4.13)$$

As a consequence of the shell remaining spherical in its proper inertial frame of reference, we have from equation (A.8) of Appendix A that the acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  of the charge element at  $\mathbf{r}$  is related to the acceleration,  $\dot{\mathbf{u}} = \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t)$ , of the center of the nonrotating shell by the formula

$$\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{a}{c^2}(\hat{\mathbf{r}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a^2). \quad (4.14)$$

Inserting the external force (4.13), the internal self electromagnetic force (4.11), and the acceleration from (4.14) into the equation (4.12), we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{\mathbf{F}_{ext}}{e} - \left( \frac{\epsilon}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} + \frac{M_0}{\epsilon} \right) \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\epsilon}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) \\ &= \frac{-\epsilon(r-a)}{4\pi\epsilon_0 \delta a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} - \frac{\epsilon}{5\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \cdot \left( \dot{\mathbf{u}}\dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\mathbf{I}}{3} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 \right) + O(a), \quad u = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (4.15)$$

Next, integrate (4.15) over the entire charge on the shell to get

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} - \left( \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} + M_0 \right) \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon + O(a) = 0, \quad u = 0 \quad (4.16)$$

since the integral of  $\hat{\mathbf{r}}$  over the uniform spherical charge distribution is zero. Divide (4.16) by the total charge  $\epsilon$  and subtract the result from (4.15) to show that the binding force has to satisfy the equation

$$\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) - \frac{1}{\epsilon} \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon \\ &= \frac{-\epsilon(r-a)}{4\pi\epsilon_0 \delta a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} - \frac{\epsilon}{5\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \cdot \left( \dot{\mathbf{u}}\dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\mathbf{I}}{3} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 \right) + O(a), \quad u = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (4.17)$$

The most general solution to (4.17) can be found by letting the binding force equal the right side of (4.17) plus a homogeneous solution  $\mathbf{f}_{bh}(\mathbf{r}, t)$

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) &= \frac{-\epsilon(r-a)}{4\pi\epsilon_0 \delta a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} - \frac{\epsilon}{5\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \cdot \left( \dot{\mathbf{u}}\dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\mathbf{I}}{3} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 \right) \\ &\quad + \mathbf{f}_{bh}(\mathbf{r}, t) + O(a), \quad u = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (4.18)$$

Substituting  $\mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from (4.18) into (4.17) and again noting that the integral of  $\hat{\mathbf{r}}$  over the charge distribution is zero, one sees that the homogeneous solution must satisfy the condition

$$\mathbf{f}_{bh}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{1}{\epsilon} \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{bh}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon. \quad (4.19)$$

The right side of (4.19) is not a function of position  $\mathbf{r}$ , so the left side,  $\mathbf{f}_{bh}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , cannot be a function of  $\mathbf{r}$ , that is

$$\mathbf{f}_{bh}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{f}_{bh}(t) \quad (4.20)$$

and (4.19) reduces to an identity.

Since we have proven that the homogeneous solution  $\mathbf{f}_{bh}$  for the binding force is independent of the position of the charge element within the shell, it does not average to zero when integrated over the charge unless it is identically zero. This homogeneous binding force is exerted on the insulator in the opposite direction. Specifically, if the rest mass of the uncharged insulator is  $m_{ins}$  (assumed uniformly distributed over the sphere),  $\mathbf{f}_{bh}$  is given simply as

$$\mathbf{f}_{bh}(t) = -\frac{m_{ins}}{c} \dot{\mathbf{u}} \quad (4.21)$$

from Newton's second law of motion applied to the insulator in its proper frame. (The inhomogeneous binding force in (4.18) is also exerted in the opposite direction on the insulator but because its total integrated value is zero it does not contribute to the acceleration of the rigid insulator.) With the addition of the homogeneous binding force (4.21), the binding force (4.18) per unit charge needed to keep the charge on the moving insulator is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) &= \frac{-e(r-a)}{4\pi\epsilon_0\delta a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} - \frac{e}{5\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \cdot \left( \dot{\mathbf{u}}\dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\tilde{\mathbf{I}}}{3} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 \right) \\ &\quad - \frac{m_{ins}}{c} \dot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a), \quad u = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (4.22)$$

Equation (4.22) shows that the binding force is independent of the bare mass  $M_0$ .

The first term on the right side of (4.22), when integrated over the thickness of the shell of charge, produces the static binding force (4.2) per unit charge given by Poincaré [16].

The second term on the right side of (4.22) is a binding force that does not appear in Poincaré's analysis using a charged shell moving with constant velocity. It is required to cancel the self electromagnetic acceleration forces in (4.11) that vary with position  $\mathbf{r}$  about the shell.

The third term on the right side of (4.22) accounts for the force exerted on the charge to accelerate the mass of the uncharged insulator. If gravitational fields [17,18] or the dipolar binding forces contribute to the rest energy of formation, this mass can be included in the mass of the uncharged insulator.

When we integrate the force per unit charge in (4.22) over the shell, the first two terms on the right side of (4.22) vanish to give a total binding force equal to the homogeneous binding force

$$\mathbf{F}_b = \int_{\text{shell}} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon = -\frac{m_{ins}}{c} \dot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a), \quad u = 0 \quad (4.23)$$

needed to accelerate the insulator in the proper frame. Furthermore, because the first two terms of the internal binding force (4.22) at every point within the charge shell equal the negative of the internal electromagnetic force (4.11), except for the terms in (4.11) that are independent of  $\hat{\mathbf{r}}$ , the analyses in Appendixes A and B can also be applied to these internal binding forces to obtain the total binding force and the total power delivered to the charge by the binding forces in an arbitrary frame of reference. In particular, the generalization of the second term on the right side of (4.22) to an arbitrary inertial frame integrates to zero when finding the total binding force, and leads to a term of order  $a$  when finding the total

power delivered to the charge by the binding forces. The first term on the right side of (4.22) also integrates to zero in an arbitrary inertial frame but contributes to the power delivered to the charge by the amount given in (2.6) or (4.10) when multiplied by the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and integrated over the charge. And, of course, the third term in (4.22) generalizes immediately to  $-m_{ins}d(\gamma\mathbf{u})/dt$ , which contributes  $-m_{ins}c^2d\gamma/dt$  to the power delivered to the charge.

Thus, the total binding force and power, contributed by the rigorously derived internal binding force per unit charge needed to keep the charge on an insulator moving with arbitrary velocity, are identical to those given in (4.4) and (4.10) by Poincaré (for a massless insulator,  $m_{ins} = 0$ ) using binding forces inferred from the fields and forces of a charge distribution moving with constant velocity, that is

$$\mathbf{F}_b(t) = \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon = -m_{ins} \frac{d(\gamma\mathbf{u})}{dt} + O(a), \quad u = 0 \quad (4.24a)$$

$$P_b(t) = \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon = \frac{-e^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} \right) - m_{ins}c^2 \frac{d\gamma}{dt} + O(a). \quad (4.24b)$$

Recall that the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  for each portion of the charge distribution cannot equal the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(t)$  of the center of the shell (except when  $\mathbf{u}(t) = 0$ ) if the shell is to remain spherical in its proper frame of reference (see Appendix A). Thus  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in the charge integral of (4.24b) cannot be taken outside the integral sign. Also, we rely on the indirect procedures of Appendixes A and B to determine the charge integrals in (4.24) for an arbitrarily moving shell, rather than transform the proper-frame binding force per unit charge (4.22) to obtain the general binding force per unit charge  $\mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in an arbitrary inertial frame. The reason for this indirect procedure is that (4.22) holds for different spatial points within the shell at one instant of time only in the proper frame, but the relativistic transformation of (4.22) to an arbitrary inertial frame for different spatial points within the shell requires the force over an interval of time in the original (proper) frame of reference, even as the radius  $a$  approaches zero, because of the  $1/a^2$  term in (4.22).

Equations (4.24a) and (4.24b) critically confirm that the rigorously derived binding forces for charge on a relativistically rigid insulator moving with arbitrary center velocity, like the original Poincaré binding forces (4.2), remove the discrepancy (2.6) between the power equation of motion (2.4) and the force equation of motion (2.1), while having no effect (except for the addition of the mass of the uncharged insulator) on the force equation of motion (2.1), or the  $4/3$  factor in the electromagnetic mass. With the addition of the binding stresses to the self electromagnetic stresses, the force-power, but not the momentum-energy, transforms as a four-vector; see Section 6.1.

### 4.2.1 Electric polarization producing the binding forces

One can find a particular polarization at the surface of the insulator that will produce the static binding forces derived in the previous section. When the charge is at rest, the electric field for the dipolar binding forces is given by the first term of (4.18) within the shell of charge ( $a < r < a + \delta$ ) and zero everywhere else. An electric polarization that would produce this

internal binding electric field is given simply by a radial polarization density,  $\mathbf{P}(\mathbf{r})$ , within the thin shell of charge proportional to the binding electric field

$$\mathbf{P}(\mathbf{r}) = \begin{cases} \frac{\epsilon(r-a)}{4\pi\delta a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} & , \quad a < r < a + \delta \\ 0 & , \quad a + \delta < r < a . \end{cases} \quad (4.25)$$

The total electric field,  $\mathbf{E}_T(\mathbf{r})$ , is the sum of the electric field of the free-charge and the electric field produced by the radial polarization density. For the charge at rest, it is given by

$$\mathbf{E}_T(\mathbf{r}) = \begin{cases} 0 & , \quad r < a + \delta \\ \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi\epsilon_0 r^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} & , \quad r > a + \delta . \end{cases} \quad (4.26)$$

In other words, the polarization adds a bound volume charge density ( $-\nabla \cdot \mathbf{P}$ ) that cancels the free-charge density within the surface layer ( $a \leq r < a + \delta$ ), and a compensating bound surface charge density ( $\mathbf{P} \cdot \hat{\mathbf{r}}$ ) at the outer surface ( $r = a + \delta$ ). The total charge (free-charge plus bound polarization charge) reduces to that of Lorentz's original free-charge shell model of the electron as the thickness  $\delta$  of the shell approaches zero.

As the thickness  $\delta$  of the shell approaches zero, the electrostatic energy of formation of the free-charge and polarization distribution is the same as the free-charge alone; thereby confirming that the rest energy and mass contributed by the short-range dipolar binding forces can be assumed zero. For the shell at rest, there is no net force exerted on the free-charge by the polarization. (When the charge is moving, the results of Sections 4.1 and 4.2 show that the polarization binding forces supply a net force and power to the free-charge given in (4.24).)

One can also determine an effective molecular polarizability required to produce the polarization that holds the free-charge on the stationary insulator. For a linear, homogeneous, isotropic dielectric insulator, the polarization density is proportional to the local field

$$\mathbf{P} = \alpha_v \left( \epsilon_0 \mathbf{E}_T + \frac{\mathbf{P}}{3} \right) = \alpha_v \frac{\mathbf{P}}{3}, \quad a < r < a + \delta \quad (4.27)$$

where the proportionality constant  $\alpha_v$  is the molecular polarizability per unit volume [11, ch. 2]. This last equation shows that the effective molecular polarizability at the surface of the insulator must be equal to 3.0 in order for the free-charge distribution to excite the required polarization density.

In brief, the free-charge uniformly distributed in a thin layer at the surface of the insulator induces an effective dielectric polarizability of 3.0 within this layer and a polarized field that cancels the self repulsive forces that the free charge exerts on itself. Opposite forces are, of course, exerted on the polarized molecules of the dielectric insulator. These insulator molecules do not fly apart because they are held together in the stable energy configurations described by nonclassical physics (quantum electrodynamics rather than the classical electrodynamics employed here).

Before leaving this chapter on the internal binding forces, let us summarize with hindsight the origin and elimination of the discrepancy in power (2.6) between the Lorentz-Abraham

force and power equations of motion. When the charged sphere is stationary, each element of the charge experiences a repulsive force due to its own electric field. This electrostatic force integrated over the charge contributes nothing to the total force on the charge. When the charged sphere moves, this static self force transforms relativistically, but still integrates to give a zero total force. However, the moving charged sphere contracts relativistically in the direction of the velocity by an amount proportional to  $1/\gamma$ , while the component of the static self force per unit charge parallel to the velocity remains unchanged. Thus, the component of the static self force parallel to the velocity does work at a rate proportional to the time rate of change of  $1/\gamma$ , as exhibited by the negative of the power in (2.6).

In addition to the self electrostatic force on the stationary charge distribution, each element of charge is held to the insulator by a binding force that just cancels the electrostatic force. When the charged sphere moves, this binding force exerted on the charge contributes exactly the negative of the power delivered to the charge by the electrostatic force, thereby canceling the discrepancy in power (2.6) between the force and power equations of motion.

A subtle question arises concerning the mass of the insulator. Even if the rest mass of the insulator is negligible, the insulator exerts a binding force on the charge distribution that does work on the moving charge at the rate given by (2.6) or (4.10). The negative of this binding force is exerted on the insulator by the charge. Consequently, work is done on the moving insulator at the rate given by the negative of (2.6). Thus, one might ask if the mass of the moving insulator is changed by this work done upon it by the binding forces. Has the problem of the excess power term (2.6) simply been transferred from the charge distribution to the uncharged insulator?

To some extent, it has, but it is a problem that can be allayed by looking at a specific model of the insulator material. In particular, if it is assumed that the insulator material is composed of point particles separated in free space, the forces on each of the point particles in the stationary insulator must sum to zero. Moreover, the total work done by these forces, when the insulator moves, is zero because the equal and opposite forces on each of the point particles are separated by the infinitesimal diameter of each particle, and thus contract relativistically by an infinitesimal amount. The total work done by the forces throughout the insulator material is zero. In other words, the work done by the binding forces on the surface of the insulator are canceled by the internal stresses of the point-particle model of the insulator material, and thus does not affect the mass of the insulator.

## Chapter 5

# ELECTROMAGNETIC, ELECTROSTATIC, BARE, MEASURED, AND INSULATOR MASSES

As a means of discussing the various masses, let us summarize the basic results that have been derived so far in our re-examination of the Lorentz model of the electron. We begin with a specific model that we can, in principle, realize in our classical laboratory, namely, a charge  $e$  uniformly distributed on the surface of an insulator which remains spherical with constant radius  $a$  in its proper inertial frame of reference. Whether or not the model actually approximates the internal structure of the electron is irrelevant to its analysis, which is based on Maxwell's equations with retarded (causal) solutions only, the Lorentz force law, the relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion, the Einstein mass-energy relation, and the short-range molecular dipole forces binding the charge to the insulator surface.

When an external force is applied to the shell of charge, for example, by means of an external electric field, the charge distribution moves with velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ . Except when the insulator has zero velocity, the velocity of the charge at different positions  $\mathbf{r}$  on the surface of the insulator cannot have the same velocity  $\mathbf{u} = \mathbf{u}(t)$  as the center of the insulator if the insulator remains spherical in its proper frame. (The relationship between  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and the center velocity  $\mathbf{u}(t)$  is given in equation (A.13) for  $(u/c)^2 \ll 1$ , and equation (B.31) for arbitrary  $u/c$ .)

The force on each differential element  $d\epsilon$  of the moving charge is the sum of the externally applied force per unit charge  $\mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , the internal electromagnetic force per unit charge  $\mathbf{f}_e(\mathbf{r}, t)$  generated by the charge itself, and the molecular binding forces per unit charge  $\mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t)$  holding the charge to the insulator, that is

$$[\mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{f}_e(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t)] d\epsilon . \quad (5.1a)$$

Similarly, the work done per unit time by these forces on the element of charge  $d\epsilon$  moving

with velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  is

$$[\mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{f}_{el}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t)] \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon . \quad (5.1b)$$

The internal self electromagnetic force is determined by the Lorentz force law in terms of the self electric and magnetic fields excited by the moving charge. The self electromagnetic fields in the charge distribution derive from Maxwell's equations with retarded (causal) potentials to give the self electromagnetic force per unit charge in (4.11) in the proper frame. The binding force per unit charge was derived in Section 4.2 by applying Newton's second law of motion to each differential element of charge under the requirements that the charge remains uniformly distributed on the relativistically rigid spherical insulator in its proper frame of reference (instantaneous rest frame) and that the mass of the charge distribution is uniformly distributed with the charge in its proper frame. The binding force per unit charge exerted on the charge in the proper frame by the short-range dipole forces holding the charge to the insulator is given in (4.22). It is emphasized that this binding force is not speculated but deduced from the specific model of the charge residing on the surface of a nonrotating insulator that maintains its spherical shape and uniform charge distribution in its proper frame.

The total force  $\mathbf{F}(t)$  exerted on the charge and the total power  $P(t)$  delivered to the charge are found by integrating (5.1a) and (5.1b) respectively, over the charge distribution

$$\mathbf{F}(t) = \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon + \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{el}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon + \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon \quad (5.2a)$$

$$P(t) = \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon + \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{el}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon + \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon . \quad (5.2b)$$

By definition

$$\int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon = \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) . \quad (5.3a)$$

Also, because the radius  $a$  is assumed small enough that the externally applied force varies negligibly with the position over the charge distribution (see (4.13)), the integral involving the external force in (5.2b) becomes

$$\int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon = \mathbf{u}(t) \cdot \int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{ext}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon + O(a^2) = \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(t) + O(a^2) . \quad (5.3b)$$

The expression (B.31) in Appendix B for  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in terms of the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(t)$  of the center of the shell has been used to perform the integration in (5.3b).

The integrals of the self electromagnetic Lorentz force and power in (5.2a) and (5.2b), shown explicitly in (3.1) and (3.2) and evaluated rigorously in Appendix B for the arbitrarily moving shell of charge, are just the negative of the right hand sides of the Lorentz-Abraham force equation of motion (2.1) and the Lorentz-Abraham power equation of motion (2.4), respectively. That is

$$\int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{et}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma \mathbf{u}) + \frac{\epsilon^2 \gamma^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \dot{\mathbf{u}} \right. \\ \left. + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} \left[ (\mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} \right\} + O(a) \quad (5.4a)$$

and

$$\int_{charge} \mathbf{f}_{et}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \gamma - \frac{1}{4\gamma} \right) \\ + \frac{\epsilon^2 \gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ (\mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a) \quad (5.4b)$$

where, as throughout,  $\mathbf{u}$  and its derivatives on the right sides of (5.4) refer to the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(t)$  of the center of the shell.

The integrals of the binding force and power in (5.2a) and (5.2b) were evaluated in Section 4.2 and are given explicitly in (4.24a) and (4.24b), respectively. The total binding force (4.24a) is zero for a massless insulator, but the power delivered by the binding force (4.24b) to the charge just cancels the electromagnetic power term in the right side of (5.4b) that creates the discrepancy (2.6) between the right side of (5.4b) and  $\mathbf{u}$  dotted into the right side of (5.4a). Thus, as a result of adding (5.3), (5.4) and (4.24), the total force (5.2a) and power (5.2b) become

$$\mathbf{F}(t) = \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) - \left( \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} + m_{ins} \right) \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma \mathbf{u}) + \frac{\epsilon^2 \gamma^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \dot{\mathbf{u}} \right. \\ \left. + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} \left[ (\mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} \right\} + O(a) \quad (5.5a)$$

and

$$P(t) = \mathbf{F}(t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(t) = \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(t) - \left( \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} + m_{ins} c^2 \right) \frac{d\gamma}{dt} \\ + \frac{\epsilon^2 \gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ (\mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a) . \quad (5.5b)$$

Because the binding force has removed the discrepancy between (5.5a) and (5.5b), these two equations can also be written concisely in the four-vector notation given in (2.7). Also, all the information in both (5.5a) and (5.5b) is contained in (5.5a) alone.

## 5.1 Bare Mass in Terms of Electromagnetic and Electrostatic Masses

In (5.5a) we have derived the total force  $\mathbf{F}(t)$ , internal plus external, experienced by the charge moving with arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}(t)$ . What should this total force equal?

One's first thought might be that the total force on the charge should equal the time rate of change of momentum,  $m_{es}d(\gamma\mathbf{u})/dt$ , where  $m_{es}$  is the rest mass of the charge (apart from the insulator); or that the total force should be zero so that the externally applied force equals the time rate of change of the electromagnetic momentum when  $m_{ins}$  is zero. But this would be incorrect if one accepts the relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion [19],[6, sec. 29] that says the total *external* force applied to a particle should equal (apart from the radiation reaction and forces of order  $a$  of a charged particle) the time derivative of momentum of the particle, i.e.

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) = m \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma\mathbf{u}(t)) + (\text{radiation reaction}) + O(a) \quad (5.6a)$$

or in four-vector form

$$F^i_{ext} = mc^2 \frac{du^i}{ds} + (\text{radiation reaction}) + O(a) \quad (5.6b)$$

where  $m$  is the measured rest mass of the particle (charge plus insulator).

Accepting the rest mass term in (5.6) as an experimentally verified relation (possible extra terms are discussed in the next subsection 5.1.1), one sees that (5.5) is compatible with (5.6) if the total force in (5.5) equals the time rate of change of momentum

$$\mathbf{F}(t) = M_0 \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma\mathbf{u}) + O(a) \quad (5.7a)$$

or in four-vector form

$$F^i = M_0 c^2 \frac{du^i}{ds} + O(a) \quad (5.7b)$$

with the "bare" mass  $M_0$  related to the electromagnetic rest mass (2.2) and the measured rest mass by

$$M_0 = m - m_{el} - m_{ins}. \quad (5.8)$$

Furthermore, the measured rest mass  $m$  of the charge shell can be predicted theoretically. Assume the charge is initially distributed uniformly on a spherical surface of infinite radius where it has zero mass. The work required to assemble this charge quasi-statically from infinity to the surface of the insulator of radius  $a$  is determined from a simple electrostatic calculation [12, sec. 2.7] as  $e^2/8\pi\epsilon_0 a$ .

By the Einstein mass energy relation, the rest mass of the charged insulator will then be this electrostatic energy of formation divided by  $c^2$ , or what is called the electrostatic mass in (2.3), plus the mass  $m_{ins}$  of the uncharged insulator. (If gravitational fields [17,18] or the short-range dipolar forces binding the charge to the insulator contribute nonnegligibly to the rest energy of formation, this mass can be included in  $m_{ins}$ .) Thus, the measured rest mass of the charged insulator equals the sum of the electrostatic mass and the mass of the insulator

$$m = m_{es} + m_{ins} \quad (5.9)$$

and the bare mass in (5.8) can be written simply as

$$M_0 = m_{es} - m_{el} \quad (5.10)$$

or from (2.2) and (2.3)

$$M_0 = -\frac{e^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2}. \quad (5.11)$$

Emphatically, the value of the bare mass does not depend on the mass  $m_{ins}$  of the insulator.

The final form of the equation of motion (5.6) or, equivalently, (5.5) and (5.7), can now be written for the charged insulator as

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) &= \left[ \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} + m_{ins} \right] \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma\mathbf{u}) - \frac{e^2\gamma^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2}(\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}} \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} \left[ (\mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2}(\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} \right\} + O(a) \end{aligned} \quad (5.12a)$$

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \left[ \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a} + m_{ins}c^2 \right] \frac{d\gamma}{dt} - \frac{e^2\gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ (\mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2}(\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a). \quad (5.12b)$$

Of course, (5.12b) is redundant because it is consistent with the equation obtained by taking the dot product of  $\mathbf{u}$  with (5.12a). The negative bare mass  $M_0$  in (5.11) eliminates the 4/3 factor in the inertial rest mass of the original Lorentz-Abraham equation of motion (2.1) in which the bare mass was assumed zero. With the addition of the bare-mass force-power to the binding and electromagnetic force-power, the total force-power and the total momentum-energy transform as four vectors; see Section 6.1.

The mass of the insulator ( $m_{ins}$ ) allows the equations of motion (5.12) for the charged insulator to be written with an arbitrary value of the inertial mass. Thus, (5.12) conforms with the results of Schwinger [20], who shows that stress-momentum-energy tensors with covariant momentum-energy for stable charge-current distributions can be constructed with or without the 4/3 factor. Setting  $m_{ins}$  equal to  $m_{es}/3$  and zero, respectively, corresponds to Schwinger's tensors with and without the 4/3 factor; see Section 6.2. (The mass  $m_{ins}$  can even be negative since, as mentioned above, it includes gravitational and binding-force formation energies which, in general, are negative.)

### 5.1.1 Extra momentum-energy in Newton's second law of motion for charged particles

The relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion (5.6) for a charged particle is not determined uniquely from the nonrelativistic version of Newton's second law for uncharged particles. From purely theoretical considerations, any four-vector function of velocity and its time derivatives that vanishes when the charge is zero could be added to the right side of (5.6). If, however, we assume that the only irreversible loss of momentum-energy of the charged particle is the radiated momentum-energy (so that when the initial

and final velocity and its derivatives are the same, the only change in momentum-energy will be that which is radiated) then this extra four-vector function must be expressible as the time derivative of a momentum-energy function. In addition, since all the functions in (5.6b) satisfy the condition that their scalar product with  $u_i$  equals zero (that is, the time rate of change of momentum and energy components of (5.6b) are compatible) the extra function must also satisfy this condition. Thus, on theoretical grounds (5.6b) can be further generalized to [10]

$$F_{ext}^i = mc^2 \frac{du^i}{ds} + (\text{radiation reaction}) + \frac{dG_{extra}^i}{ds} + O(a) \quad (5.13)$$

where  $dG_{extra}^i/ds$  is a four-vector function of velocity and its derivatives, that exists only for charged particles, and satisfies

$$\frac{dG_{extra}^i}{ds} u_i = 0. \quad (5.14)$$

Of course,  $dG_{extra}^i/ds$  is a function of the charge  $\epsilon$ , since it vanishes when the charge vanishes and may be a function of the radius  $a$  of the charge distribution.

If we also assume that the only irreversible loss in angular momentum-energy of the charged particle is the radiated angular momentum-energy, since the shell of charge is assumed to translate without rotation, then  $\mathbf{u} \times \mathbf{G}_{extra}$  and its four-vector version,  $u^i G_{extra}^i - u^j G_{extra}^j$ , must be expressible as the time derivative of an angular momentum-energy function [21]. This follows from taking the cross product of the position vector  $\mathbf{r}$  of the center of the particle with the three-vector equation of motion in (5.13) to get

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{r} \times \mathbf{F}_{ext} &= m \frac{d}{dt} (\mathbf{r} \times \gamma \mathbf{u}) + \mathbf{r} \times \left( \begin{array}{c} \text{radiation} \\ \text{reaction} \end{array} \right) \\ &+ \frac{d}{dt} (\mathbf{r} \times \mathbf{G}_{extra}) - \mathbf{u} \times \mathbf{G}_{extra} + O(a) \end{aligned} \quad (5.15a)$$

or in four-vector form

$$\begin{aligned} x^i F_{ext}^j - x^j F_{ext}^i &= mc^2 \frac{d}{ds} (x^i u^j - x^j u^i) + \left( \begin{array}{c} \text{angular radiation} \\ \text{reaction} \end{array} \right) \\ &+ \frac{d}{ds} (x^i G_{extra}^j - x^j G_{extra}^i) - (u^i G_{extra}^j - u^j G_{extra}^i) + O(a). \end{aligned} \quad (5.15b)$$

When the initial and final position, velocity, and higher derivatives of the position of the center of the particle are the same, the only change in angular momentum will be in the radiated angular momentum if  $\mathbf{u} \times \mathbf{G}_{extra}$  is a perfect time differential of an angular momentum function ( $\mathbf{L}_{extra}$ )

$$\mathbf{u} \times \mathbf{G}_{extra} = \frac{d}{dt} \mathbf{L}_{extra} \quad (5.16a)$$

or in four-vector form

$$u^i G_{extra}^j - u^j G_{extra}^i = \frac{d}{ds} L_{extra}^j. \quad (5.16b)$$

There is apparently no experimental evidence for the existence of an extra momentum-energy function in the equation of motion of a charged particle at least to order  $a$ , and, as Dirac said, "they are all much more complicated than  $[mc^2 du^i/ds]$ , so that one would hardly expect them to apply to a simple thing like an electron" [10, p. 154]. Thus we will assume  $G_{extra}^n$  is zero and accept (5.6) as the correct generalization of Newton's second law of motion for the charged shell.

### 5.1.2 Reason for Lorentz setting the bare mass zero

All the tools of special relativity [1,5] were not available to Lorentz and Abraham when they originally derived the total force on the moving Lorentz model of the electron. In particular, the Einstein mass-energy relationship [5] and the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion [19] had not appeared. However, Lorentz did assume the pre-relativistic form of Newton's second law of motion and thus set the total force equal to a constant bare mass  $M$ , which Lorentz called the "material" mass, times the acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  [3, secs. 28, 32 and 179] to get

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma \mathbf{u}) + M \frac{d\mathbf{u}}{dt} + \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{radiation} \\ \text{reaction} \end{array} \right\} + O(a). \quad (5.17)$$

(For the charged insulator model, Lorentz's bare mass  $M$  in (5.17) would include the mass of the uncharged insulator, that is,  $M = M_0 + m_{ins.}$ )

The key feature of (5.17) is that Lorentz assumed the constant bare mass  $M$  in (5.17) was multiplied by  $d\mathbf{u}/dt$  rather than  $d(\gamma \mathbf{u})/dt$  (even though he and Abraham had discovered the  $\gamma$  factor in the time rate of change of the electromagnetic momentum in (5.17) before 1905).

Between 1901 and 1905, Kaufmann [22] performed experiments to determine the charge to mass ratio for "fast moving" electrons. Lorentz and Abraham hoped that these experiments would decide between Lorentz's contracting (relativistically rigid) model of the electron and Abraham's noncontracting (nonrelativistically rigid) model. Although his experiments were not accurate enough to settle this question [23], Kaufmann's experiments showed clearly that the preponderance of momentum in the electron varied as  $d(\gamma \mathbf{u})/dt$  rather than  $d\mathbf{u}/dt$ . Thus Lorentz accepted Kaufmann's results as experimental evidence that the bare mass in (5.17) was negligible. To quote Lorentz [3, sec. 32], "Of course we are free to believe, if we like, that there is some small material [bare] mass attached to the electron, say equal to one hundredth part of the electromagnetic one, but with a view to simplicity, it will be best to admit Kaufmann's conclusion, or hypothesis, if we prefer so to call it, that the negative electrons have no material [bare] mass at all. This is certainly one of the most important results of modern physics. ...." (Abraham also concluded from Kaufmann's experiments that the bare mass of the electron was zero [2, sec. 16].)

As late as 1912, Schott continued to "suppose  $M$  zero, in accordance with the most recent measurements" [13, p.178]. Even after experiments by Bucherer [24] in 1909, Neumann [25] in 1914, and Bohr [26] in 1915 decided in favor of Lorentz's contracting model over Abraham's noncontracting model of the electron, and thus also confirmed the prediction of special

relativity, at least for "electrical systems," the bare mass was generally assumed outside the jurisdiction of special relativity and these experiments were regarded as confirming that the bare mass was zero. Richardson [27, ch. 11] summarizes the general consensus in 1915:

"These experiments [Bucherer's] appear to dispose effectually of the rigid [Abraham's nonrelativistically rigid or noncontracting] electron and they may be regarded as making it reasonably certain that Thomson's corpuscles are devoid of mass except such as is due to the charge that they carry. For this reason we shall always refer to them in the sequel as negative electrons. We shall find later that the relation between [the moving mass] and [the rest mass] characteristic of the Lorentz contractible electron is true of all electrical systems according to the principle of relativity. Bucherer's experiment may therefore be regarded as evidence in favor of that principle. A remarkable confirmation of the relativity expression for the mass of a moving particle has recently been obtained by N. Bohr from consideration of the decrease of velocity of  $\alpha$  and  $\beta$  rays in passing through matter."

Cunningham [28] also gives a very readable account of the conclusions drawn in 1914 from the experiments of Kaufmann *et al.*

By 1920, it was generally accepted that the principle of relativity applied to all mass, and Pauli would write, "The old idea that one could distinguish between the constant 'true' [bare] mass and the 'apparent' electromagnetic mass, by means of deflection experiments on cathode rays, can therefore not be maintained" [6, sec. 29].

Thus, one cannot accept (5.17) or continue to assume a bare mass  $M_0$  equal to zero, for our specific model of the electron as a charged insulator, without violating the equivalence of mass and energy and the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion, which imply the negative bare mass (5.11) for this model. Also the bare mass, as pointed out in Section 4.2, should not be confused with the uncharged mass of the insulator. However, because Lorentz's bare mass corresponds to  $(M_0 + m_{ins})$  in our analysis of the charged insulator, Lorentz's bare mass  $M$  can still be zero in the special case when the mass  $m_{ins}$  of the insulator equals  $-M_0$  or  $m_{es}/3$ . In that special case the total mass of the charged insulator would be  $(4/3)m_{es}$ .

# Chapter 6

## TRANSFORMATION AND REDEFINITION OF FORCE-POWER AND MOMENTUM-ENERGY

In chapter 4 it was shown that the specific model of an electron as a charged insulator demands molecular forces, binding the charge to the insulator, that just cancel the discrepancy (2.6) between the Lorentz-Abraham force and power equations of motion, (2.1) and (2.4). In Chapter 5 we saw that the relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion, together with the Einstein mass-energy equivalence relation, require the negative bare mass (5.11) that eliminates the factor of 4/3 multiplying the electrostatic mass in the original equation of motion (2.1). In this chapter we summarize the transformation properties of the electromagnetic, binding, and bare-mass force-powers and momentum-energies, derive a total stress-momentum-energy tensor for the charged insulator model of the electron, and review the redefinitions of electromagnetic momentum-energy that have been proposed for the extended electron.

### 6.1 Transformation of Electromagnetic, Binding, and Bare-Mass Force-Power and Momentum-Energy

In order to summarize the transformation properties of the electromagnetic, binding, and bare-mass momentum and energy as well as their time derivatives, force and power, for the charged insulator model of the electron, it will be helpful first to make a concise list of these quantities. The self electromagnetic, binding, and bare-mass forces exerted on the charge, and the associated powers delivered to the charge can be written from the preceding chapters as

$$\mathbf{F}_{ei} = -\frac{d\mathbf{G}_{ef}}{dt} = -\frac{4}{3}m_{es}\frac{d(\gamma\mathbf{u})}{dt} + O(1) \quad (6.1a)$$

$$P_{el} = -\frac{dW_{el}}{dt} = -\frac{4}{3}m_{es}c^2 \frac{d}{dt} \left( \gamma - \frac{1}{4\gamma} \right) + O(1) \quad (6.1b)$$

$$\mathbf{F}_b = -\frac{d\mathbf{G}_b}{dt} = -m_{ins} \frac{d(\gamma\mathbf{u})}{dt} + O(a) \quad (6.2a)$$

$$P_b = -\frac{dW_b}{dt} = -m_{ins}c^2 \frac{d\gamma}{dt} - \frac{4}{3}m_{es}c^2 \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{4\gamma} \right) + O(a) \quad (6.2b)$$

$$\mathbf{F}_0 = -\frac{d\mathbf{G}_0}{dt} = \frac{1}{3}m_{es} \frac{d(\gamma\mathbf{u})}{dt} \quad (6.3a)$$

$$P_0 = -\frac{dW_0}{dt} = \frac{1}{3}m_{es}c^2 \frac{d\gamma}{dt} \quad (6.3b)$$

where the electrostatic mass is given in (2.3). Adding the externally applied force and power to the sum of the electromagnetic, binding, and bare-mass forces and powers in (6.1),(6.2),(6.3), and setting the total force and power equal to zero give the equations of motion (5.12) for the charged insulator.

The momentum and energy of the charged insulator system as a whole can be found by integrating the expressions (6.1),(6.2),(6.3) of force and power with respect to time for zero initial velocity. For zero initial velocity, the initial electromagnetic momentum,  $\epsilon_0 \int \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} dV$ , is zero, and the binding and bare-mass momenta are chosen zero. (I say "chosen zero" because the binding and bare-mass momenta could be given nonzero initial values as long as the sum of their initial momenta equaled zero.) The initial electromagnetic energy,  $(\epsilon_0/2) \int (E^2 + c^2 B^2) dV$ , equals the rest energy of formation of the charge ( $m_{es}c^2$ ) and the initial binding energy is chosen equal to the rest energy of the mass of the insulator ( $m_{ins}c^2$ ). Then, the initial energy of the negative bare mass is zero because the total rest energy of formation of the charged insulator is assumed equal to the sum of the electrostatic and insulator rest energies. (If it is more appealing to have the initial energy of the bare mass equal to  $-(1/3)m_{es}c^2$ , one can choose the initial binding energy equal to  $m_{ins}c^2 + (1/3)m_{es}c^2$ . Such a change would add and subtract  $(1/3)m_{es}c^2$  in the following expressions for  $W_b$  and  $W_0$ , respectively.)

$$\mathbf{G}_{el} = \frac{4}{3}m_{es}\gamma\mathbf{u} + O(1) \quad (6.4a)$$

$$W_{el} = \frac{4}{3}m_{es}c^2 \left( \gamma - \frac{1}{4\gamma} \right) + O(1) = m_{es}c^2\gamma \left( 1 + \frac{u^2}{3c^2} \right) + O(1) \quad (6.4b)$$

$$\mathbf{G}_b = m_{ins}\gamma\mathbf{u} + O(a) \quad (6.5a)$$

$$W_b = m_{ins}c^2\gamma + \frac{1}{3}m_{es}c^2 \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} - 1 \right) + O(a) \quad (6.5b)$$

$$\mathbf{G}_0 = -\frac{1}{3}m_{es}\gamma\mathbf{u} \quad (6.6a)$$

$$W_0 = -\frac{1}{3}m_{es}c^2(\gamma - 1) \quad (6.6b)$$

From these expressions of force-power and momentum-energy, one draws the following conclusions about their transformation properties. Neither the electromagnetic momentum-energy ( $c\mathbf{G}_{el}, W_{el}$ ) nor its time derivative, the electromagnetic force-power  $\gamma(c\mathbf{F}_{el}, P_{el})$ , transforms as a four-vector. Similarly, neither the binding momentum-energy ( $c\mathbf{G}_b, W_b$ ) nor the binding force-power  $\gamma(c\mathbf{F}_b, P_b)$  transforms as a four-vector. Also  $(\mathbf{F}_{el} \cdot \mathbf{u} - P_{el})$  and  $(\mathbf{F}_b \cdot \mathbf{u} - P_b)$  are not equal to zero. Even the sum of the electromagnetic and binding momentum-energy does not transform as a four-vector. However, the sum of the electromagnetic and binding force-power transforms as a four-vector and satisfies  $(\mathbf{F}_{el} + \mathbf{F}_b) \cdot \mathbf{u} - (P_{el} + P_b) = 0$ . The bare-mass force-power  $\gamma(c\mathbf{F}_0, P_0)$  also transforms as a four-vector satisfying  $\mathbf{F}_0 \cdot \mathbf{u} - P_0 = 0$ ; whereas, the bare-mass momentum-energy ( $c\mathbf{G}_0, W_0$ ) does not transform as a four-vector, but contributes to the electromagnetic and binding momentum-energy to yield a total momentum-energy that is free of the  $4/3$  factor and transforms as a four vector. (If, as mentioned above, the initial binding energy were chosen equal to  $m_{ins}c^2 + (1/3)m_{es}c^2$ , so that the initial energy of the bare mass equaled  $-(1/3)m_{es}c^2$ , then both the bare-mass momentum-energy and the sum of the electromagnetic and binding momentum-energy would transform as four-vectors.)

It may still be disconcerting that the total momentum and energy of a charged massless insulator is *not* given by the conventional electromagnetic momentum and energy

$$\mathbf{G}_{el} = \epsilon_0 \int_{all \ space} \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} dV \quad (6.7a)$$

$$W_{el} = \frac{\epsilon_0}{2} \int_{all \ space} (E^2 + c^2 B^2) dV \quad (6.7b)$$

or that the total momentum of a charged massless insulator is not given by the conventional electromagnetic momentum alone, even when the velocity of the charge is much less than the speed of light, but contains also the momentum of a negative bare mass. However, one can take consolation in realizing that no law of physics is violated by the conventional electromagnetic momentum not equaling the total momentum of the charge. What we know from Einstein's mass-energy relation and the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion is that the total momentum equals (in addition to the radiation momentum) the electrostatic mass ( $m_{es}$ , rest energy of formation divided by  $c^2$ ) times the velocity ( $\gamma\mathbf{u}$ ). However, what we know from Maxwell's equations and the Lorentz force law is merely that the sum of the external and self electromagnetic forces on the charge is  $\mathbf{F}_{ext} - \frac{d}{dt} \epsilon_0 \int \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} dV$ . Only if this force on the charge equals zero, can the total momentum of the particle be given entirely by the conventional electromagnetic momentum. Since  $\frac{d}{dt} \epsilon_0 \int \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} dV$  equals  $(4/3)m_{es}d(\gamma\mathbf{u})/dt$  (plus radiation terms) rather than  $m_{es}d(\gamma\mathbf{u})/dt$ , the Einstein mass-energy relation and Newton's second law for relativistic motion demand that this force not be zero but equal  $(-1/3)m_{es}d(\gamma\mathbf{u})/dt$ , and consequently, that the total momentum of the moving charge not be equal to its conventional electromagnetic momentum alone.

From the standpoint of the electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor, it is not surprising that the conventional electromagnetic momentum-energy does not represent the total momentum-energy of the moving charge distribution. Because the electromagnetic

stress-momentum-energy tensor is not divergenceless when charge-current is present, the associated momentum-energy will not, in general, be a four-vector. Thus the electromagnetic momentum-energy could not, in general, be expected to represent the total momentum-energy of the system.

### 6.1.1 Total stress-momentum-energy tensor for the charged insulator

The four-divergence of the electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor  $T_{el}^{ij}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  equals the force-power density [11], that is

$$\frac{\partial T_{el}^{ij}}{\partial x^j} = -f_{el}^i \quad (6.8)$$

where

$$f_{el}^i \equiv \rho(\mathbf{r}, t) \left[ \mathbf{f}_{el}(\mathbf{r}, t), \mathbf{f}_{el}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \frac{\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)}{c} \right] \quad (6.9)$$

and  $T_{el}^{ij}$  can be written out as

$$T_{el}^{ij} = \begin{bmatrix} -\bar{\mathbf{T}}_{el} & c\mathbf{g}_{el} \\ c\mathbf{g}_{el} & w_{el} \end{bmatrix} \quad (6.10)$$

$$\bar{\mathbf{T}}_{el} \equiv \epsilon_0 \left[ \left( \mathbf{E}\mathbf{E} - \frac{\mathbf{I}\mathbf{E}^2}{2} \right) + c^2 \left( \mathbf{B}\mathbf{B} - \frac{\mathbf{I}\mathbf{B}^2}{2} \right) \right] \quad (6.11a)$$

$$\mathbf{g}_{el} = \epsilon_0 \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} \quad (6.11b)$$

$$w_{el} = \frac{\epsilon_0}{2} (E^2 + c^2 B^2). \quad (6.11c)$$

One can also construct stress-momentum-energy tensors with divergences equal to the binding and bare-mass force-power densities, that is

$$\frac{\partial T_b^{ij}}{\partial x^j} = -f_b^i(\mathbf{r}, t), \quad f_b^i \equiv \rho(\mathbf{r}, t) \left[ \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t), \mathbf{f}_b(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \frac{\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)}{c} \right] \quad (6.12)$$

$$\frac{\partial T_0^{ij}}{\partial x^j} = -f_0^i(\mathbf{r}, t), \quad f_0^i \equiv \frac{e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \rho(\mathbf{r}, t) \left[ \frac{d(\gamma\mathbf{u})}{dt}, c \frac{d\gamma}{dt} \right]. \quad (6.13)$$

(As usual, when  $\mathbf{u} = \mathbf{u}(t)$  appears without the functional dependence  $(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , it refers to the velocity of the center of the charged shell.) Adding the binding and bare-mass tensors to the electromagnetic tensor would then produce a total stress-momentum-energy tensor whose momentum-energy density would form a four-vector when integrated over all space. Taking the time rate of change of this four-vector momentum-energy produces a four-vector force-power that, when set equal to the externally applied force, results in the force and power equations of motion (5.12). If no external force is applied to the charged insulator, so that

its velocity is constant, the total stress-momentum-energy tensor is divergenceless and the associated four-vector momentum-energy is conserved.

First, let us construct the bare-mass tensor  $T_0^{ij}$ , from its following three-vector equations corresponding to (6.13)

$$-\nabla \cdot \mathbf{T}_0 + \frac{\partial \mathbf{g}_0}{\partial t} = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \rho \frac{d(\gamma \mathbf{u})}{dt} \quad (6.14a)$$

$$c\nabla \cdot \mathbf{g}_0 + \frac{1}{c} \frac{\partial w_0}{\partial t} = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac} \rho \frac{d\gamma}{dt}. \quad (6.14b)$$

A fairly obvious solution to (6.14) is

$$\mathbf{g}_0 = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \gamma \rho \mathbf{u} \quad (6.15a)$$

$$w_0 = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \gamma \rho \quad (6.15b)$$

$$\mathbf{T}_0 = \frac{e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \gamma \rho \mathbf{u} \mathbf{u} \quad (6.15c)$$

or in four-vector notation

$$T_0^{ij} = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a \gamma} \rho u^i u^j. \quad (6.16)$$

Rohrlich [29, sec. 6-1] includes the bare-mass tensor (6.16) as part of the "cohesion" or binding stress-momentum-energy tensor. However, for the charged insulator model, it seems preferable to separate the bare-mass tensor from the binding tensor, because we found in Chapters 4 and 5 that the binding forces do not make the inertial mass compatible with the rest energy of formation.

It is easily shown that the solution (6.15) satisfies (6.14), or that (6.16) satisfies (6.13); specifically we have

$$-\nabla \cdot \mathbf{T}_0 = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \gamma (\nabla \cdot \rho \mathbf{u}) \mathbf{u} \quad (6.17a)$$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial \mathbf{g}_0}{\partial t} &= \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \left[ \rho \frac{\partial(\gamma \mathbf{u})}{\partial t} + \gamma \mathbf{u} \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} \right] \\ &= \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \left[ \rho \frac{d(\gamma \mathbf{u})}{dt} - \gamma (\nabla \cdot \rho \mathbf{u}) \mathbf{u} \right] \end{aligned} \quad (6.17b)$$

$$c\nabla \cdot \mathbf{g}_0 = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac} \gamma (\nabla \cdot \rho \mathbf{u}) \quad (6.17c)$$

$$\frac{1}{c} \frac{\partial w_0}{\partial t} = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac} \left[ \rho \frac{\partial \gamma}{\partial t} + \gamma \frac{\partial \rho}{\partial t} \right] = \frac{-e}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac} \left[ \rho \frac{\partial \gamma}{\partial t} - \gamma (\nabla \cdot \rho \mathbf{u}) \right] \quad (6.17d)$$

which produce identities when inserted into the left sides of (6.14a) and (6.14b).

The binding stress-momentum-energy tensor must satisfy the following three-vector equations corresponding to (6.12)

$$-\nabla \cdot \bar{\mathbf{T}}_b + \frac{\partial \mathbf{g}_b}{\partial t} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} \gamma \delta(r_0 - a) \hat{\mathbf{r}}_0 + \frac{m_{ins}}{\epsilon} \rho \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma \mathbf{u}) \quad (6.18a)$$

$$c\nabla \cdot \mathbf{g}_b + \frac{1}{c} \frac{\partial w_b}{\partial t} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4 c} \gamma \delta(r_0 - a) \hat{\mathbf{r}}_0 \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \frac{m_{ins}c}{\epsilon} \rho \frac{d\gamma}{dt}. \quad (6.18b)$$

The charge density in the first terms on the right sides of (6.18) has been expressed as a function of the static charge density, that is

$$\rho(\mathbf{r}, t) = \gamma \rho_0(\mathbf{r}_0) = \gamma \delta(r_0 - a) \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi a^2} \quad (6.19)$$

where  $\mathbf{r}_0$  is given in terms of  $\mathbf{r}$  at the time  $t$  by the Lorentz transformation

$$\mathbf{r}_0 = (\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}_c)_\perp + \gamma(\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}_c)_\parallel \quad (6.20a)$$

and the position  $\mathbf{r}_c$  of the center of the charged shell can be written in terms of the velocity of the center as

$$\mathbf{r}_c = \int^t \mathbf{u}(t') dt'. \quad (6.20b)$$

(The subscripts  $\perp$  and  $\parallel$  mean perpendicular and parallel, respectively, to the center velocity  $\mathbf{u}(t)$  at the time  $t$ ; and  $\delta(x)$  is the Dirac delta function.) The binding force per unit charge in (6.18) is equal to the exact binding force per unit charge in (4.22) with the first term on the right side of (4.22) averaged over the thickness of the shell and generalized to an arbitrary inertial reference frame. The second term on the right side of (4.22), which is present when the velocity of the charge is not constant, is not included in (6.18). Also, the expressions (6.19) and (6.20a) neglect terms of second order and higher in  $(\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}_c)$  when the velocity of the charge is not constant (see (B.29)). These secondary binding forces are necessary to hold the accelerating charge to the insulator, but they are inconsequential to the integrated force and power because the results of Chapter 4 (specifically, equations (4.24)) show that their integrals over the charge distribution are of  $O(a)$ . (In principle,  $T_b^{ij}$  could be modified to include the secondary binding stresses, but in practice it may be rather tedious to construct the necessary, relativistically invariant modification.)

A particularly simple solution to (6.18) is

$$\mathbf{g}_b = \frac{m_{ins}}{e} \gamma \rho \mathbf{u} \quad (6.21a)$$

$$w_b = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} h(a - r_0) + \frac{m_{ins}c^2}{\epsilon} \gamma \rho \quad (6.21b)$$

$$\bar{\mathbf{T}}_b = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} h(a - r_0) \bar{\mathbf{I}} - \frac{m_{ins}}{\epsilon} \gamma \rho \mathbf{u} \mathbf{u} \quad (6.21c)$$

or in four-vector notation

$$T_b^{ij} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} h(a - r_0) g^{ij} + \frac{m_{ins} c^2}{\epsilon\gamma} \rho u^i u^j \quad (6.22)$$

where  $g^{ij}$  is the metric tensor

$$g^{ij} \equiv \begin{pmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \quad (6.23)$$

and  $h$  is the unit step function.

The preceding solution for  $T_b^{ij}$  can be used to prove immediately that the  $m_{ins}$  part of the solution in (6.21) satisfies (6.18). To see that the remaining part of the solution in (6.21) satisfies (6.18), evaluate  $\nabla \cdot \dot{\mathbf{T}}_b$  and  $\partial w_b / \partial t$  for that part to get

$$-\nabla \cdot \dot{\mathbf{T}}_b = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} \nabla h(a - r_0) = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} \left[ \frac{\partial h}{\partial r_{||}} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{||} + \frac{\partial h}{\partial r_{\perp}} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{\perp} \right]$$

or

$$\begin{aligned} -\nabla \cdot \dot{\mathbf{T}}_b &= \frac{-\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} \left[ \gamma \frac{\partial h}{\partial r_{0||}} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{0||} + \frac{\partial h}{\partial r_{0\perp}} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{0\perp} \right] \\ &= \frac{-\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} \nabla_{0h} \cdot \left[ \gamma \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{0||} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{0||} + \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{0\perp} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_{0\perp} \right] \end{aligned}$$

or

$$-\nabla \cdot \dot{\mathbf{T}}_b = \frac{\epsilon^2 \delta(r_0 - a) \gamma}{32\pi\epsilon_0 a^5} \left[ \mathbf{r}_{0||} + \frac{\mathbf{r}_{0\perp}}{\gamma} \right] = -\rho \mathbf{f}_b \quad (6.24a)$$

and

$$\frac{\partial w_b}{\partial t} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi\epsilon_0 a^4} \frac{\partial h(a - r_0)}{\partial t} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi\epsilon_0 a^4} \nabla_{0h} \cdot \frac{\partial \mathbf{r}_0}{\partial t} = \frac{-\epsilon^2 \delta(r_0 - a)}{32\pi\epsilon_0 a^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_0 \cdot \frac{\partial \mathbf{r}_0}{\partial t}$$

or since from (6.20)

$$\frac{\partial \mathbf{r}_0}{\partial t} = - \left( \frac{\partial \mathbf{r}_c}{\partial t} \right)_{\perp} + \frac{\partial}{\partial t} [\gamma(\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}_c)]_{||} = -\gamma \mathbf{u} + (\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}_c)_{||} \frac{\partial \gamma}{\partial t} = -\gamma \mathbf{u} + \frac{\mathbf{r}_{0||}}{\gamma} \frac{\partial \gamma}{\partial t}$$

having made use of  $(\partial \mathbf{r}_c / \partial t)_{\perp} = \mathbf{u}_{\perp} = 0$ , so that

$$\frac{\partial \mathbf{r}_0}{\partial t} = -\gamma \mathbf{u} \left[ 1 + \frac{(\mathbf{u} \cdot \mathbf{r}_0)}{u^2} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} \right) \right]$$

then

$$\frac{1}{c} \frac{\partial w_b}{\partial t} = \frac{\epsilon^2 \delta(r_0 - a) \gamma}{32\pi\epsilon_0 a^4 c} \hat{\mathbf{r}}_0 \cdot \mathbf{u} \left[ 1 + \frac{\mathbf{u} \cdot \mathbf{r}_0}{u^2} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} \right) \right] = -\rho \mathbf{f}_b \cdot \frac{\mathbf{u}_{||}(\mathbf{r}, t)}{c}. \quad (6.24b)$$

Inserting (6.24a) and (6.24b) into (6.18) shows that the binding stress-momentum-energy tensor in (6.21) indeed satisfies its defining equations (6.18), or equivalently, that (6.22) satisfies (6.12).

Equations (B.31) and (A.21) have been used to prove in (6.24b) that (to order  $v_0^2$ )

$$\mathbf{u} \left[ 1 + \frac{\mathbf{u} \cdot \mathbf{r}_0}{u^2} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} \right) \right] = \mathbf{u}_{||}(\mathbf{r}, t). \quad (6.25)$$

Thus, the time derivative of  $w_b$  in (6.21b) equals  $-\rho \mathbf{f}_b \cdot \mathbf{u}_{||}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  rather than  $-\rho \mathbf{f}_b \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ . However, the difference is inconsequential with respect to the integral over all space of the power density, because

$$\int_{all \space} \rho \mathbf{f}_b \cdot \mathbf{u}_{||}(\mathbf{r}, t) dV = 0 \quad (6.26)$$

so that

$$\int_{all \space} \rho \mathbf{f}_b \cdot \mathbf{u}_{||}(\mathbf{r}, t) dV = \int_{all \space} \rho \mathbf{f}_b \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) dV = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma} \right) \quad (6.27)$$

exactly the right value to cancel the discrepancy (2.6) between the electromagnetic force and power. Note that if we had assumed  $\mathbf{u}$  were constant in our derivation of the binding force tensor,  $\mathbf{u}_{||}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  would equal  $\mathbf{u}$ , and the total power obtained by integrating the power density would erroneously equal zero, that is

$$\int_{all \space} \rho \mathbf{f}_b \cdot \mathbf{u}_{||} dV = \mathbf{u} \cdot \int_{all \space} \rho \mathbf{f}_b dV = 0 \quad (6.28)$$

as explained previously in Chapters 3 and 4. (From (6.24) through (6.30) below, the terms involving the mass of the insulator are ignored since they are irrelevant to this discussion.)

One can also obtain the result (6.27) by integrating the energy density  $w_b$  of the binding tensor over all space to get

$$W_b = \int_{all \space} w_b dV = \frac{\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{1}{\gamma} \quad (6.29)$$

and taking the negative of the time derivative. Note that  $W_b$  in (6.29) differs by a constant ( $\epsilon^2/24\pi\epsilon_0 a$ ) from its value in (4.9) or (6.5b) (with  $m_{ins} = 0$ ). This is because  $W_0$  calculated from

$$W_0 = \int_{all \space} w_0 dV = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \gamma \quad (6.30)$$

differs from  $W_0$  in (6.6b) by the negative of the same constant ( $-\epsilon^2/24\pi\epsilon_0 a$ ), so that the sum,  $W_b + W_0$ , remains the same whether it is calculated by adding (6.29) and (6.30) or (6.5b) and (6.6b). As mentioned in Section 6.1, an arbitrary constant energy can be added and subtracted from the binding and bare-mass energies,  $W_b$  and  $W_0$ , respectively, without changing the total energy of formation or the final equations of motion of the charged insulator.

In summary, a total stress-momentum-energy tensor  $T^{ij}$  has been derived for the charged insulator model of the electron. It can be written as the sum of the electromagnetic, binding-force, and bare-mass stress-momentum-energy tensors

$$T^{ij}(\mathbf{r}, t) = T_{el}^{ij} + \frac{e^2}{32\pi^2\epsilon_0 a^4} h(a - r_0) g^{ij} + \frac{c^2}{4\pi a^2} (m_{ins} + M_0) \delta(r_0 - a) u^i u^j \quad (6.31)$$

with the bare mass  $M_0$  equal, of course, to  $-m_{es}/3 = -e^2/(24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2)$ . In (6.31) the right side of (6.19) has replaced  $\rho$  in (6.16) and (6.22), and  $\mathbf{r}_0$  is given in terms of  $(\mathbf{r}, t)$  by the general Lorentz transformation (6.20). The four-divergence of  $T^{ij}$  produces the time rate of change of the total momentum-energy density, for the charge distribution bound to the insulator, throughout all space and time; specifically

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial T^{ij}}{\partial x^j} &= -f_{er}^i - f_b^i - f_0^i \\ &= \frac{\rho(\mathbf{r}, t)}{\gamma e} \left[ (m_{es} + m_{ins}) c^2 \frac{du^i}{ds} - \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0} \left( \frac{d^2 u^i}{ds^2} + u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} \right) \right] + O(a) \end{aligned} \quad (6.32)$$

with  $\rho(\mathbf{r}, t)$  given in (6.19).

The integral over all space of  $-\partial T^{ij}/\partial x^j$  produces the sum of the electromagnetic, binding, and bare-mass force-powers given previously in equations (6.1) through (6.3) as well as the radiation reaction and higher order electromagnetic force-power terms. In other words,  $\partial T^{ij}/\partial x^j$  integrated over all space yields a four-vector force-power and the consistent equations of motion (5.12) for the charged insulator when this integral is set equal to the externally applied force. Also, the integral of  $T^{ij}$  over all space produces the four-vector sum of the electromagnetic, binding-force, and bare-mass momentum-energies given in the equations (6.4) through (6.6), plus the four-vector electromagnetic radiation-reaction momentum-energy. If the velocity of the charge distribution is constant the right side of (6.32) is zero, or equivalently, the divergence of  $T^{ij}$  is zero, and it thereby yields a conserved four-vector momentum-energy.

When the velocity  $\mathbf{u}$  is a constant the stress-momentum-energy tensor  $T^{ij}$  given in (6.31), together with (6.20), is basically the same as Schwinger's "first stress tensor" [20, eq. (42)]. The difference is due to Schwinger's tensor having its bare-mass portion distributed throughout the oblate spheroid, whereas we have assumed the bare mass and mass of the insulator are distributed with the thin shell of charge. Of course, the stress tensors of Schwinger are not derived from the detailed analysis of the charged insulator model of the electron, but are constructed by subtracting a charge-current stress tensor, for a charge in uniform motion, from the electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor, so that the divergence of the resulting tensor is zero. (The stress tensors of Schwinger are discussed further in the following section.)

## 6.2 Redefinition of Electromagnetic Momentum and Energy

A number of authors, beginning apparently with Fermi [30], have suggested that the consideration of specific binding forces and bare masses could be avoided in obtaining the equation of motion (5.12) by redefining the electromagnetic momentum and energy (and associated stress-momentum-energy tensor) used to determine the self electromagnetic force and power [20,29,31]. In particular, they replace the original electromagnetic momentum and energy densities,  $\epsilon_0 \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$  and  $\epsilon_0(E^2 + c^2 B^2)/2$ , in the second integrals of (3.1) and (3.2) by new momentum and energy densities,  $\mathbf{g}_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and  $w_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , such that the total momentum  $\mathbf{G}_{new}$  and energy  $W_{new}$

$$\mathbf{G}_{new}(t) = \int_{all\ space} \mathbf{g}_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t) dV \quad (6.33a)$$

$$W_{new}(t) = \int_{all\ space} w_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t) dV \quad (6.33b)$$

transform as a four-vector, at least when the charge has constant velocity, and satisfy the consistency requirements (5.14) and (5.16b). Moreover,  $\mathbf{g}_{new}$  and  $w_{new}$  can be chosen to eliminate the  $4/3$  factor that arises using the conventional definition of electromagnetic momentum and energy.

For example, if the stress-momentum-energy tensor is redefined so that the momentum density  $\mathbf{g}_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  equals  $\gamma^2 \mathbf{u}$  multiplied by any invariant function involving the electromagnetic field, charge-current, or both [12, sec. 1.23] (invariant with respect to all inertial frames moving with constant relative velocities), and the energy density  $w_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  equals  $\gamma^2 c^2$  times the same invariant, that is

$$\mathbf{g}_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \gamma^2 \mathbf{u} I \quad (6.34a)$$

$$w_{new}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \gamma^2 c^2 I \quad (6.34b)$$

where  $\mathbf{u}$  is the velocity of the charge, and  $I$  is the invariant, then the total momentum and energy in (6.33) of a charge distribution moving with constant velocity transform as a four-vector. The total momentum and energy in (6.33) calculated from (6.34) determine a four-vector because  $(\gamma \mathbf{u}, \gamma c)$  is a four-vector and  $\int I \gamma dV$  is an invariant, *provided I is calculated for a charge distribution moving with constant velocity*.

Rohrlich *et al.* [29,31] redefine the momentum-energy to yield the specific invariant

$$I = \frac{\epsilon_0}{2c^2} (E^2 - c^2 B^2) \quad (6.35)$$

which can be inserted into (6.34) and integrated in (6.33) for a uniformly charged sphere moving with constant velocity  $\mathbf{u}$  to give the four-vector

$$\mathbf{G}_{new}(t) = m_{es} \gamma \mathbf{u} \quad (6.36a)$$

$$w_{new}(t) = m_{es} \gamma c^2 \quad (6.36b)$$

$$m_{es} = \frac{\epsilon_0}{2c^2} \int_{all\ space} (E^2 - c^2 B^2) \gamma dV = \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2}. \quad (6.36c)$$

For a charged sphere moving with arbitrary velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ , (6.35) still yields (6.36) for the dominant  $1/a$  terms of the momentum and energy. Thus when one replaces  $\epsilon_0 \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$  and  $\epsilon_0(E^2 + c^2 B^2)/2$  in the self electromagnetic force and power equations (3.1) and (3.2) by  $\mathbf{g}_{new}$  and  $w_{new}$  in (6.34a) and (6.34b), with  $I$  inserted from (6.35), the  $1/a$  terms in the final forms of the force and power equations of motion, (5.12a) and (5.12b), emerge without the explicit introduction of binding forces or a nonzero bare mass. However, for arbitrary velocity  $\mathbf{u}$  the invariant (6.35) does not predict the correct radiation reaction terms in the equations of motion (5.12).

Alternative momentum and energy densities to (6.34) can be found that produce consistent results for the  $1/a$  terms (consistent with the requirements (5.14) and (5.16b) on the rate of change of linear and angular momentum-energy) and correct radiation reaction terms in the momentum and energy equations of motion. Probably the simplest way to do this is to subtract the inmomentum-energy density ( $\mathbf{g}_s, w_s$ ) from the original electromagnetic inmomentum-energy density  $\epsilon_0[\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}, (E^2 + c^2 B^2)/2]$  to form

$$\mathbf{g}_{new} = \epsilon_0 \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} - \mathbf{g}_s \quad (6.37a)$$

$$w_{new} = \frac{\epsilon_0}{2}(E^2 + c^2 B^2) - w_s \quad (6.37b)$$

such that

$$\mathbf{G}_{new} = \epsilon_0 \int_{all\ space} \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} dV - \int_{all\ space} \mathbf{g}_s dV \quad (6.38a)$$

and

$$W_{new} = \frac{\epsilon_0}{2} \int_{all\ space} (E^2 + c^2 B^2) dV - \int_{all\ space} w_s dV \quad (6.38b)$$

will form the four-vector  $(m_s \gamma \mathbf{u}, m_s \gamma c^2)$ , that is

$$\mathbf{G}_{new} = m_s \gamma \mathbf{u} \quad (6.39a)$$

$$W_{new} = m_s \gamma c^2 \quad (6.39b)$$

when the charge has constant velocity, where  $m_s$  is an arbitrary constant mass. For a relativistically rigid charged sphere moving with constant velocity, we see from Appendix B or (6.4a,b) that

$$\epsilon_0 \int_{all\ space} \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} dV = \frac{4}{3} m_{es} \gamma \mathbf{u} \quad (6.40a)$$

and

$$\frac{\epsilon_0}{2} \int_{all\ space} (E^2 + c^2 B^2) dV = \frac{4}{3} m_{es} c^2 (\gamma - \frac{1}{4\gamma}) \quad (6.40b)$$

which combine with (6.38) and (6.39) to show that  $\mathbf{g}_s$  and  $w_s$  must satisfy

$$\int_{all\ space} \mathbf{g}_s dV = \left( \frac{4}{3} m_{es} - m_s \right) \gamma \mathbf{u} \quad (6.41a)$$

$$\int_{\text{all space}} w_s dV = \left( \frac{4}{3} m_{es} - m_s \right) \gamma c^2 - \frac{m_{es} c^2}{3\gamma}. \quad (6.41b)$$

Moreover, if  $(\mathbf{g}_s, w_s)$  are chosen to satisfy (6.41a) and (6.41b) for arbitrary velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ , then the time derivative of (6.38a) and (6.38b) for arbitrary velocity will yield  $1/a$  terms consistent with (5.14) and (5.16b), and correct radiation reaction terms (and all higher electromagnetic terms) in the self force and power.

Schwinger [20] has derived divergenceless stress-momentum-energy tensors for constant velocity charge-current distributions, such that a  $(\mathbf{g}_s, w_s)$  can satisfy (6.41) for  $m_s = m_{es}$ , or  $(\mathbf{g}_s, w_s)$  can satisfy (6.41) for  $m_s$  equal to the electrostatic mass  $m_{es}$ . And, in fact, his method can be immediately generalized to find a  $(\mathbf{g}_s, w_s)$  that will satisfy (6.41) for an arbitrary value of the constant mass  $m_s$  in the  $1/a$  term of the redefined momentum-energy given by (6.38).

Specifically, Schwinger rewrites the electromagnetic force-power density for uniformly moving (constant velocity) charge distributions, that are spherically symmetric in their rest frames, as the divergence of a tensor that depends only on the charge-current distribution. When this force-power tensor, which is not unique, is subtracted from the electromagnetic stress-momentum-energy tensor, a new divergenceless stress-momentum-energy tensor results for which the total momentum-energy is a four-vector. In particular, he finds the two stress-momentum-energy tensors

$$T_1^{ij} = T_{el}^{ij} + (g^{ij} - u^i u^j) \mathcal{T} \quad (6.42a)$$

and

$$T_2^{ij} = T_{el}^{ij} + g^{ij} \mathcal{T} \quad (6.42b)$$

where  $\mathcal{T}$  is a scalar that depends on the spherical charge distribution. (The first is found by subtracting the tensor  $u^i u^j \mathcal{T}$ , which is divergenceless at constant velocity, from the second.) For the uniformly moving shell of charge

$$\mathcal{T} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{32\pi^2 \epsilon_0 a^4} h(a - r_0) \quad (6.42c)$$

with  $r_0$  given in terms of  $(\mathbf{r}, t)$  through the Lorentz transformation. Thus, the first tensor (6.42a) is essentially the same as the stress-momentum-energy tensor (6.31) derived for the charged insulator model when the mass of the insulator  $m_{ins}$  is zero. Its mass, determined by the integral of the energy or momentum over all space, equals the electrostatic mass. (As mentioned in Section 6.1, the slight difference between (6.42a) and (6.31) with  $m_{ins}$  zero is the result of the bare-mass portion of Schwinger's tensor being distributed throughout the oblate spheroid rather than in the thin shell of charge.) The mass associated with the second tensor (6.42b) equals the electromagnetic mass. It would correspond to a charged insulator with the mass of the insulator material equal to  $1/3$  the electrostatic mass.

Of course, there are drawbacks to redefining the electromagnetic momentum and energy. If the momentum and energy densities are changed in the second integrals of (3.1) and (3.2), so as to also change the values of the time derivatives of these integrals, these new values of

self electromagnetic force and power will no longer equal the Lorentz force and power (the first integrals in (3.1) and (3.2)) for the shell of charge. This implies one or more of the following alternatives:

1. the definition of the Lorentz force must change
2. Maxwell's equations must change
3. the charge-current distribution must change
4. unknown forces (electromagnetic or nonelectromagnetic) are present that contribute to the total self force and power of the charge distribution.

None of these alternatives seem very attractive because they each involve introducing extra unknowns unnecessarily into the simple, deterministic model of the electron as an insulator that remains spherical and uniformly charged in every proper inertial frame of reference. Also, none of the redefined stress-momentum-energy tensors predict the second and higher order binding forces on the right hand side of (4.22) that are necessary to hold the accelerating charge to the insulator.

# Chapter 7

## MOMENTUM AND ENERGY RELATIONS

The equations of motion (5.12) for the charged insulating sphere of radius  $a$  moving with arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}(t)$  can be rewritten in four-vector notation [11] as

$$F_{ext}^i = \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0} \left[ \frac{1}{a} \frac{du^i}{ds} - \frac{4}{3} \left( \frac{d^2 u^i}{ds^2} + u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} \right) \right] + O(a) \quad (7.1)$$

with

$$F_{ext}^i \equiv \gamma \left( \mathbf{F}_{ext}, \frac{\mathbf{u}}{c} \cdot \mathbf{F}_{ext} \right) \quad (7.2a)$$

$$u^i \equiv \gamma \left( \frac{\mathbf{u}}{c}, 1 \right) \quad (7.2b)$$

$$u_i \equiv \gamma \left( -\frac{\mathbf{u}}{c}, 1 \right) \quad (7.2c)$$

$$ds \equiv \frac{c}{\gamma} dt . \quad (7.2d)$$

The factor  $e^2/8\pi\epsilon_0$  may be expressed as  $m_{es}ac^2$ , where  $m_{es}$  is the electrostatic mass given in (2.3). The mass  $m_{ins}$  of the uncharged insulator material has been set equal to zero in (7.1).

The total momentum  $\mathbf{G}_{12}$  and energy  $W_{12}$  supplied by the external force to the charge between the times  $t_1$  and  $t_2$  is given by

$$\mathbf{G}_{12} = \int_{t_1}^{t_2} \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) dt \quad (7.3a)$$

and

$$W_{12} = \int_{t_1}^{t_2} \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) \cdot \mathbf{u}(t) dt \quad (7.3b)$$

or in four-vector notation

$$G_{12}^a = (c\mathbf{G}_{12}, W_{12}) = \int_{s_1}^{s_2} F_{ext}^a ds . \quad (7.4)$$

Substituting  $F_{ext}^i$  from (7.1) into (7.4) we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} G_{12}^i &= \frac{\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0} \left\{ \frac{1}{a} [u^i(s_2) - u^i(s_1)] - \frac{4}{3} \left[ \frac{du^i}{ds}(s_2) - \frac{du^i}{ds}(s_1) \right] \right. \\ &\quad \left. - \frac{4}{3} \int_{s_1}^{s_2} u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} ds \right\} + O(a). \end{aligned} \quad (7.5)$$

If the velocity and acceleration of the particle is the same at times  $t_1$  and  $t_2$ , that is, at  $s_1$  and  $s_2$ , the momentum-energy in (7.5) reduces to

$$G_{12}^i = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0} \int_{s_1}^{s_2} u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} ds + O(a). \quad (7.6)$$

In three-vector notation

$$u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} = -\gamma \left[ \frac{\gamma^4}{c^5} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^6}{c^7} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] (\mathbf{u}, c) \quad (7.7)$$

so that (7.6) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} G_{12}^i &= (c\mathbf{G}_{12}, W_{12}) \\ &= \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} \int_{t_1}^{t_2} \left[ \gamma^4 |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^6}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] (\mathbf{u}, c) dt + O(a). \end{aligned} \quad (7.8)$$

The integrand in (7.8) is just the momentum and energy radiated per unit time by an accelerating point charge [32],[2, sec. 15]. Thus, (7.8) says that the momentum and energy imparted to the charge by the externally applied force during any time interval is equal to the momentum and energy radiated by that charge, provided the initial and final velocities and accelerations are the same. In other words, the  $du^i/ds$  and  $d^2u^i/ds^2$  terms in the equation of motion (7.1) represent reversible rates of change of momentum-energy, while the  $u^i du_j/ds da^j/ds$  term represents the irreversible rate of change of momentum-energy that radiates to the far field.

The reversible  $du^i/ds$  term is, of course, the usual rate of change of momentum-energy four-vector in the relativistic version of Newton's second law of motion

$$\frac{\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{du^i}{ds} = \frac{\epsilon^2 \gamma}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a c^2} \frac{d}{dt} (\gamma \mathbf{u}, \gamma c). \quad (7.9)$$

Its integral over a proper time interval determines the reversible change in kinetic momentum-energy of the particle during that time interval.

The reversible  $d^2u^i/ds^2$  term can be written in three-vector form as

$$\frac{-\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0} \frac{d^2u^i}{ds^2} = \frac{-\epsilon^2 \gamma}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \frac{d}{dt} \left\{ \left[ \gamma^2 \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\gamma^4}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \mathbf{u} \right], \frac{1}{c} (\gamma^4 \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \right\}. \quad (7.10)$$

When this perfect differential is integrated over proper time it yields a reversible change in momentum-energy that cannot be classified as either a change in kinetic momentum-energy or a change in radiated momentum-energy (which is irreversibly lost to the far field). Schott [33] called the energy portion of (7.10), that is

$$-\frac{e^2 \gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \quad (7.11)$$

the “acceleration energy” because it “must be regarded as work stored in the electron in virtue of its acceleration”. Therefore, this part of (7.10) is sometimes referred to as the Schott energy term, although Abraham [2, sec. 15] had previously separated the reversible momentum as well as the reversible energy of (7.10) in his derivation of the radiation reaction for a charge moving with arbitrary velocity.

Before and after the external force is applied, the acceleration of the charge is zero so that the Schott acceleration momentum-energy is zero; and, as expected, the momentum-energy that has been supplied by the external force has been converted entirely to kinetic and radiated momentum-energy. However, while the external force is being applied, the charge is accelerating and the momentum-energy supplied by the external force is converted to “Schott acceleration momentum-energy”, as well as kinetic and radiated momentum-energy.

A physically intuitive understanding of the “acceleration” momentum-energy can be gained by looking at (7.1) for time harmonic motion. With the help of (7.7), (7.9) and (7.10), the momentum and energy equations of motion in (7.1) may be written separately in the three-vector notation as

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}_{ext} = & \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \frac{d(\gamma\mathbf{u})}{dt} - \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \frac{d}{dt} \left[ \gamma^2 \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\gamma^4}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \mathbf{u} \right] \right. \\ & \left. - \frac{\gamma^4}{c^2} \left[ |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} \right\} + O(a) \end{aligned} \quad (7.12a)$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = & \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d\gamma}{dt} - \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \frac{d}{dt} (\gamma^4 \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \right. \\ & \left. - \gamma^4 \left[ |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \right\} + O(a). \end{aligned} \quad (7.12b)$$

The first terms on the right sides of (7.12) can be interpreted simply as the rates of change of kinetic momentum and energy required to accelerate the static energy that is connected with the moving charge. To understand the second terms on the right sides of (7.12), consider a charge oscillating rectilinearly with sinusoidal frequency  $\omega$ , so that the velocity is given by

$$u(t) = U_0 \sin(\omega t) \quad (7.13)$$

and the radiation reaction terms in the energy equation of motion (7.12b) become

$$-\frac{d}{dt} (\gamma^4 \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) = -U_0^2 \omega^2 \cos(2\omega t) \quad (7.14)$$

$$\gamma^4 \left[ |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] = U_0^2 \omega^2 \cos^2(\omega t) \quad (7.15)$$

when  $(u/c)^2 \ll 1$ .

The irreversible reaction term (7.15) behaves as a time-harmonic radiated power, that is, it has the time dependence of the Poynting vector integrated over a closed surface in the far field. Its average over time has the positive value  $U_0^2 \omega^2 / 2$ . The reversible “acceleration” reaction term (7.14) behaves as a reactive power whose average over time is zero. In other words, if the oscillating charge were an antenna fed by a single-frequency input voltage and current, (7.14) and (7.15) would contribute to the reactive and resistive (radiation resistance) parts, respectively, of the input impedance of the antenna.

For a charge whose velocity and acceleration are continually increasing with time, rather than oscillating, the reversible kinetic energy continually increases, the irreversible radiated power increases, and more and more reactive or Schott acceleration energy is taken from the electromagnetic fields of the charge. A similar unlimited increase in the radiated and reactive energies occurs when the frequency of an oscillating charge or electric dipole is continually increased, as one can see from (7.15) and (7.14). However, the reactive energy taken from the fields of an oscillating charge, although it can increase without limit by increasing the frequency, is always returned to zero and supplied to the fields in an equal amount during each half period of oscillation.

## 7.1 Hyperbolic and Runaway Motion

For hyperbolic motion (relativistically uniform acceleration), which is defined as [29, sec. 5-3 and 6-11]

$$\frac{d^2 u^i}{ds^2} + u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} = 0 \quad (7.16)$$

the reversible reactive power cancels the radiated power and the equation of motion (7.1) reduces to that of an uncharged particle

$$F_{ext}^i = \frac{e^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{du^i}{ds} + O(a) \quad (7.17)$$

that is, the time rate of change of kinetic momentum-energy equals the applied force minus the  $O(a)$  terms. The charged particle radiates by drawing energy from the reactive fields of the charge, the reactive fields continually being replenished by the increasing acceleration of the charge.

For the runaway solutions (see Chapter 8), exponentially increasing, homogeneous solutions to (7.1), the reactive power cancels both the radiated power and the kinetic power, that is

$$\frac{d^2 u^i}{ds^2} = -u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} + \frac{3}{4a} \frac{du^i}{ds} \quad (7.18)$$

(neglecting  $O(a)$  terms), or in three-vector notation

$$\frac{d}{dt} \left[ \gamma^2 \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\gamma^4}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \mathbf{u} \right] = \frac{\gamma^4}{c^2} \left[ |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} + \frac{3c}{4a} \frac{d(\gamma \mathbf{u})}{dt} \quad (7.19a)$$

$$\frac{d}{dt} (\gamma^4 \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) = \gamma^4 \left[ |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + \frac{3c^3}{4a} \frac{d\gamma}{dt}. \quad (7.19b)$$

Even though these runaway solutions are presumably not physically realizable, they are mathematically valid homogeneous solutions to the differential equation of motion that do not violate conservation of momentum-energy. Both the increasing reversible kinetic momentum-energy and the increasing irreversible radiated momentum-energy are taken entirely from the reservoir of reversible reactive momentum-energy that is continually being supplied by the increasing acceleration of the charge. It is emphasized that the unlimited supply of reactive momentum-energy for the runaway modes is produced by the unlimited increase in the four-acceleration of the particle, and is not dependent upon the radius of the charge approaching zero or mass of the particle approaching infinity.

Although the homogeneous runaway solutions do not violate the conservation of momentum-energy, it is shown in Chapter 8 that the exponentially increasing runaway behavior is eliminated from the complete solution of (7.1) by invoking the asymptotic condition of zero acceleration as  $t$  approaches infinity.

In an attempt to get an equation of motion that involves only the kinetic and radiated momentum-energy of a charged particle, one may be tempted to simply discard the reactive momentum-energy term in (7.1) or its three-vector equivalent in (7.12). Unfortunately, the resulting simplified equation of motion would no longer be consistent with  $F_{ext}^i u_i$  zero. In terms of the three-vector equations, the scalar product of  $\mathbf{u}$  with (7.12a) would no longer equal (7.12b).

It seems quite remarkable that without the insight and transformations of special relativity, Abraham was able to determine the reversible (reactive) parts of the radiation reaction force and power in (7.12) from a knowledge of the radiated momentum and energy of an accelerating point charge; then prove that the solution was unique [2, sec. 15]. (In the four-vector notation of (7.1) and with the transformations of special relativity, the determination of the reversible part of the radiation reaction from the radiated part is an elementary exercise. Uniqueness of solution follows from the fact that a four-vector which reduces to zero in the proper inertial frame must be zero in an arbitrary inertial frame.)

# Chapter 8

## SOLUTIONS TO THE EQUATION OF MOTION

As a preliminary to solving the equation of motion (7.1) for the uniformly charged sphere of radius  $a$  and total charge  $\epsilon$ , write the magnitude of the four acceleration in (7.1) as

$$\frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} = \frac{(\mathbf{w} \cdot \mathbf{w}')^2}{\gamma^2 c^6} - \frac{w'^2}{c^4} \quad (8.1a)$$

where  $\mathbf{w}$  is defined in terms of the velocity of the center of the shell by

$$\mathbf{w} = \gamma \mathbf{u}, \quad \gamma = (1 - u^2/c^2)^{-1/2} = (1 + w^2/c^2)^{1/2} \quad (8.1b)$$

and the primes denote derivatives with respect to the proper time

$$d\tau = dt/\gamma. \quad (8.1c)$$

Insertion of (8.1) into (7.1) yields the three-vector equation for  $\mathbf{w}$

$$\gamma \mathbf{F}_{ext} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{\mathbf{w}'}{a} - \frac{4}{3c} \mathbf{w}'' + \frac{4}{3c^3} \left( w'^2 - \frac{(\mathbf{w} \cdot \mathbf{w}')^2}{c^2 \gamma^2} \right) \mathbf{w} \right] + O(a). \quad (8.2)$$

For rectilinear motion in the  $x$  direction

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} = F_{ext} \hat{\mathbf{x}} \quad (8.3a)$$

$$\mathbf{w} = w \hat{\mathbf{x}} \quad (8.3b)$$

and (8.2) becomes

$$\gamma F_{ext} = \frac{\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{w'}{a} - \frac{4}{3c} w'' + \frac{4}{3c^3} \frac{w'^2 w}{\left(1 + \frac{w^2}{c^2}\right)} \right] + O(a). \quad (8.4)$$

Following Schott [33] we see that the substitution

$$w/c = \sinh(\mathcal{V}/c) \quad (8.5)$$

reduces this equation for rectilinear motion to the simpler differential equation

$$\frac{F_{ext}}{m_{es}} = \mathcal{V}' - \frac{4a}{3c}\mathcal{V}'' + O(a^2) \quad (8.6)$$

where the electrostatic mass has been inserted from (2.3), and division by  $m_{es}$  changes the  $O(a)$  terms in (7.1) to  $O(a^2)$  in (8.6).

## 8.1 Solution to the Equation of Rectilinear Motion

If the terms of order  $a^2$  in (8.6) are neglected, the most general solution to the resulting equation of rectilinear motion can be written as

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{V}'(\tau) &= -e^{3c\tau/4a} \left[ \frac{3c}{4m_{es}a} \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') e^{-3c\tau'/4a} d\tau' + A \right] \\ &\quad -\infty < \tau < \infty \end{aligned} \quad (8.7)$$

where the external force is applied at  $\tau = 0$  and is assumed zero for all time  $\tau < 0$ . Integration of (8.7) with respect to the proper time  $\tau$  gives the general solution for  $\mathcal{V}$  as

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{V}(\tau) &= B + \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau' \\ &\quad -e^{3c\tau/4a} \left[ \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') e^{-3c\tau'/4a} d\tau' + \frac{4a}{3c} A \right]. \\ &\quad -\infty < \tau < \infty \end{aligned} \quad (8.8)$$

Integrating (8.8) with respect to the proper time, one could also obtain the position of the center of the shell. This would introduce a third arbitrary constant ( $A$  and  $B$  being the other two) that can be determined by specifying the position of the particle at a certain time, or in the remote past.

To determine the two remaining constants,  $A$  and  $B$ , two other boundary conditions are required. This is one more constant and boundary condition than is required by Newton's second law of motion for uncharged particles, which involves only the first derivative of velocity, rather than the first and second derivatives in (8.6). At first thought, since the external force is not applied until  $\tau = 0$ , one might set the velocity and acceleration equal to zero at  $\tau = 0$  to obtain zero for both the constants  $A$  and  $B$ . Then (8.8) would become

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{V}(\tau) &= \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau' - \frac{e^{3c\tau/4a}}{m_{es}} \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') e^{-3c\tau'/4a} d\tau'. \\ &\quad -\infty < \tau < \infty \end{aligned} \quad (8.9)$$

Unfortunately, there is a serious problem with the solution (8.9). The velocity function  $\mathcal{V}(\tau)$  and all its derivatives approach infinity ( $u(t) \rightarrow c$ ) as  $\tau \rightarrow \infty$ , even when the external force is applied for a finite time.

Returning to (8.7) or (8.8) we see that these "runaway solutions" are eliminated as  $\tau \rightarrow \infty$  if and only if the constant  $A$  is given by

$$A = \frac{-3c}{4m_{es}a} \int_0^\infty F_{ext}(\tau') e^{-3c\tau'/4a} d\tau'. \quad (8.10)$$

Equation (8.10) insures that the acceleration in (8.7) approaches zero as  $\tau \rightarrow \infty$ , if the external force approaches zero as  $\tau \rightarrow \infty$ ; and thus (8.10) can be considered a result of the "asymptotic condition" [10,29]

$$\lim_{s \rightarrow \infty} \frac{du^i}{ds} = 0 \quad (8.11a)$$

when

$$\lim_{s \rightarrow \infty} F_{ext}^i(s) = 0. \quad (8.11b)$$

(Rohrlich [29, sec. 8-2] points out that the asymptotic condition can be based on a fundamental "principle of undetectability of small charge", which asserts that the motion of a charged particle must approach that of a neutral particle in the limit as the charge approaches zero.) After insertion of  $A$  from (8.10), (8.8) can be written as

$$\mathcal{V}(\tau) = B + \frac{1}{m_{es}} \left[ \int_\tau^\infty F_{ext}(\tau') e^{-3c(\tau' - \tau)/4a} d\tau' + \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau' \right] \quad (8.12a)$$

$$-\infty < \tau < \infty$$

or

$$\mathcal{V}(\tau) = B + \frac{1}{m_{es}} \left[ \int_0^\infty F_{ext}(\tau + \tau') e^{-3c\tau'/4a} d\tau' + \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau' \right]. \quad (8.12b)$$

$$-\infty < \tau < \infty$$

A final boundary condition is needed to evaluate the constant  $B$  in (8.12). One can evaluate  $B$  by specifying the initial velocity, but this procedure leads to a velocity in the remote past ( $\tau \rightarrow -\infty$ ) that depends on the external force, which we have assumed is applied at  $\tau = 0$ . Specifically, if one enforces the initial condition  $\mathcal{V}(0) = 0$  in (8.12) then both the constant  $B$  and the velocity function in the remote past are given by

$$B = \mathcal{V}(-\infty) = -\frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^\infty F_{ext}(\tau') e^{-3c\tau'/4a} d\tau'. \quad (8.13)$$

Physically, it is much more appealing to demand that in the remote past the velocity be zero or a constant that is independent of the applied force. Thus, if the final boundary condition on the motion of the charge is an asymptotic condition on the velocity in the remote past: in particular, for zero velocity in the remote past

$$\lim_{s \rightarrow -\infty} u = 0 \quad (8.14)$$

then  $B = 0$  and (8.12) becomes

$$\mathcal{V}(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \left[ \int_0^\infty F_{ext}(\tau + \tau') e^{-3c\tau'/4a} d\tau' + \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau' \right]. \quad (8.15)$$

$-\infty < \tau < \infty$

Equation (8.15), combined with the definitions (8.5) and (8.1b), is the general solution for the rectilinear velocity  $\mathbf{u}$  of the center of the shell of charge for all time under the two asymptotic conditions that the acceleration approaches zero in the distant future (for zero external force in the distant future) and the velocity approaches zero in the remote past. Of course, the external force must be well-behaved enough for the integrals in (8.15) to exist, and the solution was obtained under the assumption that the terms of order  $a^2$  in (8.6) could be neglected.

The solution (8.15) exhibits two noteworthy peculiarities. The most unsettling one, pre-acceleration, or acceleration before the external force is applied at  $\tau = 0$ , is considered in the next section.

The second peculiarity with the solution (8.15) is that if the force is zero after it is applied over a finite time interval,  $0 \leq \tau < \tau_0$ , the velocity reduces to

$$\mathcal{V}(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^{\tau_0} F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau', \quad \tau > \tau_0 \quad (8.16a)$$

or equivalently

$$\gamma u(t) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^{t_0} F_{ext}(t') dt', \quad t > t_0 \quad (8.16b)$$

the final velocity one would obtain if the radiation term  $\mathcal{V}''$  in (8.6) were ignored entirely. This result (8.16) is not so objectionable, if one realizes that it does not imply that the radiated momentum-energy is zero,  $\mathcal{V}''$ ; that the work done by the external force is converted to kinetic energy alone. To see this, integrate (7.12) over all time that the velocity is changing ( $-\infty < t < t_0$ ) to get (for rectilinear motion)

$$\int_{-\infty}^{t_0} F_{ext} dt = \int_0^{t_0} F_{ext} dt = m_{es} \gamma u(t_0) + \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^5} \int_{-\infty}^{t_0} \gamma^6 \dot{u}^2 u(t) dt \quad (8.17a)$$

$$\int_{-\infty}^{t_0} F_{ext} u dt = \int_0^{t_0} F_{ext} u dt = m_{es} c^2 \gamma(t_0) + \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \int_{-\infty}^{t_0} \gamma^6 \dot{u}^2(t) dt. \quad (8.17b)$$

The reversible reactive momentum-energy in (7.12), that is, the Schott acceleration momentum-energy (see Chapter 7), does not contribute to (8.17) because the final acceleration and the acceleration in the remote past are both zero. The first terms on the right sides of (8.17) give the kinetic momentum-energy, while the second terms give the change in radiated momentum-energy. During pre-acceleration ( $-\infty < t < 0$ ) only the runaway solution is present, and, as explained in Chapter 7, the reactive momentum-energy cancels both the kinetic and radiated momentum-energy. If the final velocity of the charge also equals zero ( $u(t_0) = 0$ ) the change in the kinetic momentum-energy is zero and (8.17) confirms that the

entire impulse and work delivered by the external force is converted to radiated momentum-energy. Note that even when the final velocity (as well as velocity in the remote past) is zero, we have the inequalities

$$\int_0^{t_0} F_{ext} dt \neq \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^5} \int_0^{t_0} \gamma^6 \dot{u}^2 u(t) dt \quad (8.18a)$$

and

$$\int_0^{t_0} F_{ext} u dt \neq \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \int_0^{t_0} \gamma^6 \dot{u}^2(t) dt . \quad (8.18b)$$

That is, in order for the total momentum-energy radiated to equal the impulse and work delivered by the externally applied force when the final velocity (and velocity in the remote past) are zero, the integration of the radiated time rate of change of momentum-energy must include the pre-acceleration, because the initial velocity  $u(0)$  is not zero in the pre-acceleration solution (8.15).

## 8.2 Cause and Elimination of the Pre-Acceleration

The solution (8.15) to the equation of the motion predicts a nonzero acceleration before the external force is applied at  $\tau = 0$ . One may be tempted to simply set the acceleration or velocity equal to zero for  $\tau < 0$  to eliminate the pre-acceleration in (8.15). However, the resulting solution does not satisfy the original differential equation (8.6) (with  $O(a^2)$  terms neglected) because the velocity becomes discontinuous across  $\tau = 0$  (even when the external force is continuous) and spurious delta functions and derivatives of the delta functions are introduced into the derivatives of the velocity at  $\tau = 0$ . For example, if the external force is a unit step applied at  $\tau = 0$

$$F_{ext}(\tau) = \begin{cases} 0 & , \tau < 0 \\ 1 & , \tau \geq 0 \end{cases} \quad (8.19)$$

then the solution (8.15) becomes simply

$$\mathcal{V}(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_s} \begin{cases} \frac{4a}{3c} e^{3c\tau/4a} & , \tau \leq 0 \\ \frac{4a}{3c} + \tau & , \tau \geq 0 . \end{cases} \quad (8.20)$$

We see that (8.20) satisfies the equation of motion (8.6) (with the  $O(a^2)$  terms neglected) for all  $\tau$ , whereas setting  $\mathcal{V}(\tau) = 0$  for  $\tau < 0$  in (8.20) violates the equation of motion by introducing delta and doublet functions in  $\mathcal{V}'(\tau)$  and  $\mathcal{V}''(\tau)$  at  $\tau = 0$ . Similarly, a spurious delta function is introduced into  $\mathcal{V}''(\tau)$  by differentiating (8.20) and setting the acceleration zero for  $\tau < 0$ , regardless of the initial velocity.

Although the noncausal pre-acceleration decays in the past at the rapid rate of  $1/\epsilon$  in the proper time interval light takes to travel  $4/3$  the radius of the charge, it should not appear

in the solution to the equation of motion because the equation of motion was derived using only causal (retarded-potential) solutions to Maxwell's equations. It is not surprising that the equation of motion of a charged particle allows homogeneous solutions like the runaway modes, which are not present in Newton's second law of motion for uncharged particles, because the radiation reaction introduces time derivatives of acceleration into the equation of motion. The disturbing feature of the equation of motion is that when the asymptotic condition (8.11) is applied to eliminate the runaway modes from the inhomogeneous solution, noncausal pre-acceleration cannot be avoided for a solution that remains well-behaved at  $t = 0$ , the time the external force is first applied.

The root cause of the pre-acceleration solution will be determined by returning to the derivation of the equation of motion of the extended model of the electron. Before doing so, however, let us show that the pre-acceleration is not eliminated by including the higher order terms in the equation of motion ( $O(a^2)$  terms in the equation of rectilinear motion (8.6)).

The pre-acceleration solution (8.15) is a solution to (8.6) when the terms of order  $a^2$  are negligible, yet the solution (8.15) violates this requirement. To see this, return to the series expansion for the self electromagnetic force (as in Appendix D) and note that the terms of order  $a^2$  in (8.6) are negligible if

$$\frac{1}{n+1} \left| \frac{d^{n+1}u}{dt^{n+1}} \right| \ll \frac{c}{2a} \left| \frac{d^n u}{dt^n} \right|, \quad n = 2, 3, \dots \quad (8.21a)$$

in the proper frame of reference of the charge. The inequalities in (8.21a) represent a sufficient condition for neglecting the terms in the equation of motion beyond the radiation reaction term. In words, (8.21a) says that the fractional change (divided by  $n+1$ ) in the second and higher derivatives of velocity in the proper frame is small during the time interval it takes light to traverse the charge distribution. A necessary condition for neglecting the terms beyond the radiation reaction is

$$\frac{2}{(n+1)!} \left| \frac{d^{n+1}u}{dt^{n+1}} \right| \ll \left( \frac{c}{2a} \right)^{n-1} \left| \frac{d^2 u}{dt^2} \right|, \quad n = 2, 3, \dots \quad (8.21b)$$

The pre-acceleration solution (8.15) behaves as  $\exp(3c\tau/4a)$  for  $\tau < 0$  and thus does not satisfy the conditions (8.21) because

$$\frac{d^{n+1}}{d\tau^{n+1}} \left( e^{3c\tau/4a} \right) = \frac{3c}{4a} \frac{d^n}{d\tau^n} \left( e^{3c\tau/4a} \right). \quad (8.22)$$

Thus, the pre-acceleration solution in (8.15) is not a valid solution to the equation of motion (8.6) for the charged insulator of radius  $a$  when the  $O(a^2)$  terms are retained. (This is confirmed by substituting the pre-acceleration solution into (D.17).)

Unfortunately, when the  $O(a^2)$  terms are retained, the pre acceleration (runaway solution for  $\tau < 0$ ) is not eliminated, just the time dependence of the pre-acceleration is altered. Specifically, the analyses of Herglotz [34] and Wildermuth [35] show that that runaway

solutions to the linearized, homogeneous form of our equation of motion (7.1) exist for all time, so that pre-acceleration exists for  $t < 0$ , regardless of how many linear higher order terms are included in the linearized equation of motion [36]. (These results of Herglotz and Wildermuth apply to the charged insulator when the sum of the bare mass and material mass of the insulator,  $M_0 + m_{ins}$ , is less than zero. This condition is met by (7.1) because the bare mass in (7.1) has the negative value of  $M_0 = -m_{es}/3$ , and the mass of the insulator  $m_{ins}$  has been set equal to zero. Even when the mass of the insulator is not zero, the value of the sum,  $m_{ins} - m_{es}/3$ , is negative for small enough values of the radius  $a$ .)

The analyses of Herglotz and Wildermuth are approximate in that they neglect all  $O(a^2)$  terms involving nonlinear products of the time derivatives of velocity in the proper-frame equation of motion (see Section 8.5). However, the analysis of motion of the two-charge (dumbbell) problem [37], although it neglects the self force of each individual charge, includes nonlinear terms and also exhibits the existence of runaway solutions. Thus, in general, the inclusion of higher order terms in the equation of motion fails to eliminate the pre-acceleration.

The root cause of the pre-acceleration can be found by examining the assumptions involved in the derivation of the equation of motion. In Chapters 2 through 5 and the Appendixes, the equation of motion was derived for the extended model of the electron as a charged insulating sphere of radius  $a$ . To simplify the discussion, concentrate on the force equation of motion (5.12a) in the proper frame of reference of the charged insulator (with  $m_{ins}$  zero)

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) = \frac{\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a). \quad (8.23)$$

As explained in Section 5.1, the rest mass, or coefficient of the  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  term in (8.23), is determined ultimately, not from the electromagnetic self force, but from the relativistic generalization of Newton's second law of motion and the Einstein mass-energy relation. In particular, the rest mass must equal the energy of formation ( $\epsilon^2/8\pi\epsilon_0 a$ ) of the charged insulator divided by  $c^2$ .

The  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$  and higher order reaction terms in the equation of motion (8.23) are determined from the derivation of the self electromagnetic force. This derivation, outlined in Appendix A, depends upon expanding the position, velocity, and acceleration of each element of charge at the retarded time ( $t' = t - R'(t')/c$ ) in a Taylor series about the present time ( $t$ ). For example, the velocity of the element of charge at  $\mathbf{r}'$  in the proper frame is expanded as

$$\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t') = \mathbf{u}\left(\mathbf{r}', t - \frac{R'(t')}{c}\right) = -\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t) \frac{R'(t')}{c} + \ddot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t) \frac{R'^2(t')}{2c^2} + \dots \quad (8.24a)$$

where the distance  $R'(t')$  has the Taylor series expansion

$$R'(t') = R(t) - \frac{R(t)\mathbf{R} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t)}{2c^2} + \dots. \quad (8.24b)$$

These Taylor series expansions are valid *provided the velocity function  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', T)$  is an analytic function of time  $T$  for  $T$  between  $t'$  and  $t$ , that is, for  $T$  during the time interval  $R'(t')/c$*

before  $t$  (more precisely,  $|T - t| < R'/c$ ). For the self-force calculation in the proper frame of reference,  $R'(t')$  does not exceed a value of about  $2a$  (assuming the velocity does not change rapidly for time  $T$  between  $t'$  and  $t$ ; in other words, assuming the velocity change is a small fraction of the speed of light during the time it takes light to traverse the charge distribution).

After the external force is applied at  $t = 0$ , one may assume that the external force  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t)$ , and thus the velocity of the charge  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t)$ , is an analytic function of  $t$  for  $t > 0$ . However, since the external force and velocity are zero for  $t < 0$ , they cannot be analytic functions of  $T$  between  $t'$  and  $t$  when  $t$  is greater than zero but less than  $R'(t')/c \lesssim 2a/c$ , because then  $t'$  is less than zero. In other words, the Taylor series expansions in (8.24) are invalid for

$$0 < t \lesssim 2a/c \quad (8.25)$$

and thus the following expression obtained from equation (A.10) of Appendix A for the self electromagnetic force in the proper frame is *not valid* during this short time interval (8.25) after the external force is first applied

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = & \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int \int_{charge} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}'}{R^2} + \frac{1}{2c^2 R} \left[ \frac{\mathbf{r}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{c^2} - 1 \right] [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\hat{\mathbf{R}} + \ddot{\mathbf{u}}] \right. \\ & \left. + \frac{3}{8} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{c^4} [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 - |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2] + \frac{3(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4c^4} + \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + O(R) \right\} d\epsilon' d\epsilon, \quad u = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (8.26)$$

Fortunately, one can see directly from equation (A.2) of Appendix A how the integral in (8.26) should be modified for  $t < R'(t')/c$ . Specifically, for  $t < R'(t')/c$ ,  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t')$  and  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t')$  are identically zero so that  $d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in (A.2) reduces to  $d\epsilon' \hat{\mathbf{R}}'/4\pi\epsilon_0 R'^2$ . Thus, a simple modification to the integrand of (8.26), shown in the following equation (8.27), produces an expression for the self electromagnetic force that is valid for all time in the proper frame

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = & \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int \int_{charge} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}'}{R'^2} + h\left(t - \frac{R'(t')}{c}\right) \left[ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{R^2} - \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}'}{R'^2} + \frac{1}{2c^2 R} \right. \right. \\ & \cdot \left[ \frac{\mathbf{r}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{c^2} - 1 \right] [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\hat{\mathbf{R}} + \ddot{\mathbf{u}}] + \frac{3}{8} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{c^4} [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 - |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2] \\ & \left. \left. + \frac{3(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4c^4} + \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + O(R) \right] \right\} d\epsilon' d\epsilon, \quad u = 0 \end{aligned} \quad (8.27)$$

where  $h(t)$  in (8.27) is the unit step function.

Although the step function appearing in (8.27) represents a minor modification, it prevents the exact evaluation of the double-integration in (8.27) during the time interval (8.25). Nonetheless, for  $t < 0$  the value of the integral is zero, and for  $t \gtrsim 2a/c$ , the integral yields the usual expression (A.11) for the self electromagnetic force in the proper frame.

During the time just after the external force is applied ( $0 < t \ll 2a/c$ ), the equation (A.2) reveals that the self electromagnetic force, in a fixed laboratory frame of reference (denoted

by  $L$ ) coinciding with the initial position of the charge distribution, can be written

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int \int_{charge} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}'_L(t')}{R_L'^2(t')} de' de + O\left(\frac{t^2}{a^2}\right), \quad (8.28)$$

$$\mathbf{R}'_L(t') \equiv \mathbf{r}_L(t) - \mathbf{r}'_L(t').$$

Since  $\mathbf{r}_L(t)$  can be expanded about  $t = 0^+$  as

$$\mathbf{r}_L(t) = \mathbf{r}_0 + \dot{\mathbf{u}}(0^+)t^2/2 + \ddot{\mathbf{u}}(0^+)t^3/6 + \dots, \quad t > 0 \quad (8.29)$$

where  $\mathbf{r}_0$  is the initial position vector of the  $de$  charge element, and  $\mathbf{r}'_L(t')$  can be expanded as

$$\mathbf{r}'_L(t') = \mathbf{r}'_0 + O(t^2), \quad t > 0 \quad (8.30)$$

where  $\mathbf{r}'_0$  is the initial position vector of the  $de'$  charge element,  $\mathbf{R}'_L(t')$  can be written

$$\mathbf{R}'_L(t') = \mathbf{R}_0 + O(t^2), \quad \mathbf{R}_0 = \mathbf{r}_0 - \mathbf{r}'_0. \quad (8.31)$$

Substitution of (8.31) into (8.28) yields

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int \int_{charge} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}_0}{R_0^2} de' de + O\left(\frac{t^2}{a^2}\right), \quad 0 < t \ll \frac{2a}{c}. \quad (8.32)$$

The first term on the right side of (8.32), the double integral over the initial static charge distribution of the sphere, is zero. Moreover, (8.32) shows that the self electromagnetic force approaches zero as  $t^2$  or faster as  $t$  approaches zero. Thus, the self electromagnetic force increases smoothly from its zero value at  $t < 0$  to its value given in (A.11) for  $t \gtrsim 2a/c$ .

In all then, during the time interval (8.25), each term in the self electromagnetic force (A.11) is multiplied by a function of time that increases monotonically from zero at  $t = 0$  to unity at  $t \approx 2a/c$ . That is, the self electromagnetic force in the proper frame determined by the corrected integral expression (8.27) can be written as

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \eta_1(t) \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t) + \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \eta_2(t) \ddot{\mathbf{u}}(t) + O(a), \quad u = 0, \quad (8.33)$$

$$\eta_{1,2}(t) = \begin{cases} 0 & , t \leq 0 \\ 1 & , t \gtrsim 2a/c. \end{cases}$$

When (8.33) is used in Chapter 5 for the determination of the force equation of motion, Newton's second law of motion and Einstein's mass-energy relation demand that the total force (external plus self electromagnetic force) equals a time rate of change of momentum that cancels the  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  term in (8.33) and adds the rest-mass time rate of change of momentum,  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}\epsilon^2/8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2$ , for all time. The  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  term is retained from the self force calculation (8.33) to yield a proper-frame equation of motion valid for all time

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) = \frac{\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t) - \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \eta(t) \ddot{\mathbf{u}}(t) + O(a), \quad u = 0, \quad (8.34)$$

$$\eta(t) = \begin{cases} 0 & , t \leq 0 \\ 1 & , t \gtrsim 2a/c . \end{cases}$$

In an arbitrary inertial reference frame, and in four-vector notation, (8.34) generalizes to

$$F_{ext}^i = \frac{\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0} \left[ \frac{1}{a} \frac{du^i}{ds} - \frac{4}{3} \eta(s) \left( \frac{d^2 u^i}{ds^2} + u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} \right) \right] + O(a), \quad (8.35)$$

$$\eta(s) = \begin{cases} 0 & , s \leq 0 \\ 1 & , s \gtrsim 2a . \end{cases}$$

Note that the scalar function  $\eta(s)$  in (8.35) does not destroy the covariance of the equation of motion. Also, if the mass of the uncharged insulator material were not negligible,  $m_{ins}$  would be added to the electrostatic mass ( $\epsilon^2/8\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2$ ) in the first terms on the right sides of (8.34) and (8.35).

The necessity of the function  $\eta$ , which increases monotonically from zero to one in the short time it takes light to travel across the electron, is quite easy to understand physically by considering two differential elements of charge at either end of the charge distribution. These two elements are at rest separated by a distance  $2a$ . When the external force is first applied, each of these charge elements accelerates and radiates. However, each element of charge does not experience the radiation from the other until approximately the time it takes light to travel between them. Thus, there will be a time delay in the radiation reaction force of about  $2a/c$  between these two elements of charge separated by  $2a$ . For the other combinations of charge elements separated by a distance less than  $2a$ , the time delay of the radiation will be proportionately less. The double integration over the entire sphere of charge elements  $d\epsilon$  and  $d\epsilon'$  produces a continuous addition of radiation forces with time delays varying from zero to about  $2a/c$ . Hence the function  $\eta$  appears in (8.34) and (8.35), monotonically increasing from zero to unity between the time the external force is first applied and the time  $\approx 2a/c$  after which the self electromagnetic force can be expressed entirely in terms of the present velocity and its time derivatives.

The function  $\eta$  is a small yet important addition to the equation of motion because it allows well-behaved solutions to the equation of motion that satisfy initial conditions on velocity and  $\ddot{t}$  at  $t=0$  free of pre-acceleration. To show this, rewrite (8.35) for rectilinear motion in the form of (8.6) by means of the change of variables defined at the beginning of Chapter 8. Neglecting the terms of  $O(\epsilon^2)$ , we have

$$\frac{F_{ext}(\tau)}{m_{es}} = V'(\tau) - \frac{4a}{3c} \eta(\tau) V''(\tau), \quad (8.36)$$

$$\eta(\tau) = \begin{cases} 0 & , \tau \leq 0 \\ 1 & , \tau \gtrsim 2a/c . \end{cases}$$

Equation (8.36) is a first order linear differential equation for  $V'(\tau)$ . Its solution for all  $\tau$ ,

under the asymptotic condition (8.11) is given by

$$\mathcal{V}'(\tau) = \begin{cases} 0 & , \tau < 0 \\ \frac{-1}{m_{es}} \int_{\tau}^{\infty} F_{ext}(\tau') \frac{d}{d\tau'} \left[ e^{-\frac{3c}{4a} \int_{\tau}^{\tau'} \frac{d\tau''}{\eta(\tau'')}} \right] d\tau' & , \tau \geq 0 \end{cases} \quad (8.37)$$

where as usual we have assumed that the external force is applied at  $\tau = 0$  and is zero for  $\tau < 0$ . Integration of (8.37) over time produces the solution for the velocity of the charge that is zero for  $\tau < 0$  and continuous for all  $\tau$ , even across  $\tau = 0$ , as long as  $F_{ext}(\tau)$  is continuous or has a finite jump across  $\tau = 0$ . *In other words, the inclusion of the  $\eta$  function in the equation of motion has eliminated the pre-acceleration from the solution to the original equation of motion without introducing false discontinuities in velocity across  $\tau = 0$  or spurious delta functions and their derivatives at  $\tau = 0$ .*

The modified equation of motion (8.35), or its rectilinear version (8.36), still admits a homogenous runaway solution for  $t > 0$ ; however, this runaway solution is zero for  $t < 0$  and thus is eliminated from the modified equation of motion by the asymptotic condition (8.11) without introducing noncausal motion (acceleration for  $t < 0$ ) into the solution. (Interestingly, a nonrelativistic quantum electrodynamical analysis of the electron as an extended charged particle exhibits neither runaway solutions nor observable noncausal motion if the value of the fine-structure constant of the electron is less than about one, and predicts a vanishing electrostatic self energy in the point charge limit [38].)

For  $\tau \gtrsim 2a/c$  the solution (8.37) for the acceleration  $\mathcal{V}'$  becomes identical to the solution for acceleration to the original equations of motion (8.6) obtained in Section 8.1, namely

$$\mathcal{V}'(\tau) = \frac{3c}{4m_{es}a} \int_{\tau}^{\infty} F_{ext}(\tau') e^{-3c(\tau' - \tau)/4a} d\tau', \quad \tau \gtrsim 2a/c. \quad (8.38)$$

When the external force is first applied at  $\tau = 0$ , the acceleration is given by (8.37) as

$$\mathcal{V}'(0) = \frac{-1}{m_{es}} \int_0^{\infty} F_{ext}(\tau') \frac{d}{d\tau'} \left[ e^{-\frac{3c}{4a} \int_0^{\tau'} \frac{d\tau''}{\eta(\tau'')}} \right] d\tau'. \quad (8.39a)$$

Integrating (8.39a) by parts, assuming  $F_{ext}(\tau)$  is a continuous function from the right at  $\tau = 0$ , one obtains

$$\mathcal{V}'(0) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^{\infty} \frac{dF_{ext}(\tau')}{d\tau'} \left[ e^{-\frac{3c}{4a} \int_0^{\tau'} \frac{d\tau''}{\eta(\tau'')}} \right] d\tau' + \frac{F_{ext}(0)}{m_{es}}. \quad (8.39b)$$

Since (8.32) shows that  $\eta(\tau) \rightarrow 0$  near  $\tau = 0$  as  $\tau^2$  or faster, the exponential in the integrand of (8.39b) is zero, so that (8.39b) reduces to simply

$$\mathcal{V}'(0) = \frac{F_{ext}(0)}{m_{es}}. \quad (8.40)$$

Equation (8.40) expresses the intuitively satisfying result that the acceleration of the charged insulator equals the external force divided by the mass when the external force is first applied.

In addition, the acceleration and velocity are zero before the external force is applied ( $\tau < 0$ ), and the velocity is continuous across  $\tau = 0$  for an external force that has at most a finite discontinuity at  $\tau = 0$ .

Although the solution to the corrected equation of motion (8.35) is free of pre-acceleration, it may be bothersome that for  $t \gtrsim 2a/c$  the motion at the present time, as seen for example in (8.38), depends on the values of the external force at all future times. Note, however, that the contribution from future times appreciably greater than the time it takes light to traverse the charge is not only small but meaningless because (8.36) and (8.38) neglect terms of order  $a^2$ . Also, the result becomes understandable, if it is remembered that (8.38) is the solution to an equation of motion obtained under the restriction that the externally applied force must be an analytic function of time for all  $t > 0$ . Thus, assume that for  $\tau' > 0$ ,  $F_{ext}(\tau')$  in (8.38) can be expanded in a power series about  $\tau$  to recast (8.38) in the form

$$\mathcal{V}'(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{4a}{3c} \right)^n \frac{d^n F_{ext}(\tau)}{d\tau^n}, \quad \tau \gtrsim 2a/c \quad (8.41)$$

which simply states that the acceleration at any one time ( $\tau \gtrsim 2a/c$ ) depends on the time derivatives of the applied force as well as the applied force itself at that time. (Note that (8.41) is not a valid representation for  $\tau < 2a/c$ ; and only the first two terms in the summation are a valid asymptotic solution for  $\tau \gtrsim 2a/c$  because (8.36) and (8.38) neglect terms of order  $a^2$ .)

The equation of motion, (8.34) or (8.35), was derived assuming that the external force is zero for  $t < 0$  and an analytic function of time for  $t > 0$ . The nonanalytic point at  $t = 0$  gave rise to the  $\eta$ -function modification in (8.34) and (8.35). If the external force were not analytic at other points of time, similar modifications to the equation of motion would be needed, in general, near these points.

Abraham also realized that the traditional series representation of the self electromagnetic force became invalid for “discontinuous movements” of the charge. In Section 23 of [2] he states, “These two forces [electromagnetic mass term plus radiation reaction] are basically nothing other than the first two terms of a progression which increases in accordance with increasing powers of the electron’s radius  $a$ . . . . Because the internal force is determined by the velocity and acceleration existing in a finite interval preceding the affected point in time, such a progression is always possible when the movement is continuous and its velocity is less than the speed of light. . . . The series will converge more poorly the closer the movement approaches a discontinuous movement and the velocity approaches the speed of light . . . . It fails completely for discontinuous movements. . . . Here, other methods must be employed when computing the internal force.” Abraham goes on to derive the radiated energy and momentum of a charged sphere with discontinuous velocity [39]. He also derives Sommerfeld’s general integral formulas for the internal electromagnetic force [40]. Neither he nor Sommerfeld, however, evaluates or interprets these general integrals except to show they yield a null result for a charged sphere moving with constant velocity. And, of course, a key to deriving the corrected equation of motion (8.35) is to realize that the modifying function  $\eta$  applies to the radiation reaction but not to the inertial mass term.

### 8.3 Power Series Solution to Equation of Rectilinear Motion

The pre-acceleration solution (8.15) to the equation of rectilinear motion (8.6) was derived in Section 8.1, and the solution (8.37) to the corrected equation of rectilinear motion (8.36) was derived in Section 8.2, under the assumption that the  $O(a^2)$  terms in (8.6) and (8.36) could be neglected.

To get a solution to the equation of rectilinear motion for the charged insulator of radius  $a$ , that in principle could include the  $O(a^2)$  terms, ignore the correction function  $\eta(\tau)$  in (8.36) so that (8.36) becomes identical to (8.6). Then expand the acceleration function  $V'(\tau)$  in powers of  $a$ , that is

$$V'(\tau) = \alpha'(\tau) + \beta'(\tau)a + O(a^2) \quad (8.42)$$

so that (8.6) becomes

$$\frac{F_{ext}}{m_{es}} = \left[ \alpha' + \left( \beta' - \frac{4}{3c} \alpha'' \right) a + O(a^2) \right] \quad (8.43)$$

where the primes on  $\alpha'$  and  $\beta'$ , as well as  $V'$ , denote differentiation with respect to the proper time  $\tau$ . Equating like powers of  $a$  in (8.43) we can solve for  $\alpha'$  and  $\beta'$  in terms of  $F_{ext}/m_{es}$ , namely

$$\alpha'(\tau) = \frac{F_{ext}}{m_{es}} \quad (8.44a)$$

$$\beta'(\tau) = \frac{4}{3c} \alpha''(\tau) = \frac{4}{3c} \frac{F'_{ext}}{m_{es}} \quad (8.44b)$$

so that the solution (8.42) for the acceleration function can be written

$$V'(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \left[ F_{ext}(\tau) + \frac{4a}{3c} F'_{ext}(\tau) + O(a^2) \right]. \quad (8.45)$$

$-\infty < \tau < \infty$

Integration of (8.45) with respect to the proper time yields the velocity function

$$V(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \left[ \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau' + \frac{4a}{3c} F'_{ext}(\tau) + O(a^2) \right] \quad (8.46)$$

$-\infty < \tau < \infty$

when the external force and velocity are zero before  $\tau = 0$ .

The  $O(a^2)$  terms in (8.46) are negligible at any time  $\tau$  if

$$\left| \frac{d^{n+1} F_{ext}(\tau)}{d\tau^{n+1}} \right| \ll \frac{c}{a} \left| \frac{d^n F_{ext}(\tau)}{d\tau^n} \right|, \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots \quad (8.47)$$

that is, whenever the fractional changes in the externally applied force and its time derivatives are small during the time interval it takes light to traverse the radius of the charged sphere.

The solution in (8.46) for the rectilinear velocity function of the charged insulator of radius  $a$  contains no runaway solutions, no pre-acceleration, and is obtained using the single initial condition of zero velocity immediately before the external force is applied. Of course, an arbitrary constant velocity could be added to the right side of (8.46) if the velocity were not zero before the external force were applied. However, regardless of the initial conditions, the velocity is, in general, discontinuous across  $\tau = 0$ , and the series solution (8.46) contains spurious delta functions at  $\tau = 0$  that violate the criteria (8.17) and do not satisfy the equation of rectilinear motion (8.6).

The first two terms in the brackets of (8.46) can also be found from the pre-acceleration solution (8.15) by expanding the external force  $F_{ext}(\tau + \tau')$  in a Taylor series about the present time  $\tau$ , so that integrating term by term yields [31, 41]

$$\mathcal{V}(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \left[ \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{4a}{3c} \right)^{n+1} \frac{d^n F_{ext}(\tau)}{d\tau^n} + \int_0^\tau F_{ext}(\tau') d\tau' \right]. \quad (8.48)$$

$-\infty < \tau < \infty$

However, this expansion (8.48) of the pre-acceleration integral in (8.15) does not, in general, yield a valid asymptotic series solution to (8.6) beyond the first term in the summation of (8.48) because (8.15) was derived from the equation of motion (8.6) by neglecting self-force terms of order  $a^2$ . In other words, the  $O(a^2)$  terms in (8.48) are not equal to the  $O(a^2)$  terms in (8.46).

It should also be noted that the power series solution (8.48) converges to the pre-acceleration solution (8.15) for  $\tau > 0$  but not for  $\tau < 0$ . The reason for this discrepancy between the series solution (8.48) and the exact solution (8.15) to (8.6) with the  $O(a^2)$  terms omitted is that  $F_{ext}(\tau + \tau')$  cannot be expanded in a Taylor series about  $\tau \leq 0$  for all  $\tau' \geq 0$  because  $F_{ext}(\tau)$  is identically zero for  $\tau < 0$ .

When the external force becomes zero after it is applied for a finite time interval, the power series solution (8.46), like the pre-acceleration solution (8.15), produces the same final velocity that would be produced if the radiation reaction, the  $\mathcal{V}''$  term in (8.6), were neglected. Also, like the pre-acceleration solution, the effect of the radiation reaction on the power series solution for the velocity function  $\mathcal{V}$ , during the time the external force is applied, approaches zero as  $aF_{ext}/m_{es}$ , as the radius  $a$  of the charged sphere approaches zero. Indeed, the motion of the charged insulator should be determined solely by the conventional momentum,  $m_{es}d(\gamma\mathbf{u})/dt$ , as the radius of the shell approaches zero, since the mass  $m_{es}$  becomes infinite while the radiation reaction term remains finite as the radius approaches zero. As long as  $F_{ext}/m_{es}$  remains finite, however, it is emphasized that these results do not imply that the radiated momentum and energy

$$\frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^5} \int_0^t \gamma^6 \dot{u}^2 u(t) dt \quad \text{and} \quad -\frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \int_0^t \gamma^6 \dot{u}^2(t) dt \quad (8.49)$$

respectively, for the power series solution of the charged insulator in rectilinear motion, approach zero as the radius  $a$  approaches zero. (Note that with the power series solution (8.46), because there is no pre-acceleration, the radiated momentum-energy (8.49) is determined by

integrating the time rate of change of radiated momentum-energy starting at the time  $t = 0$  when the external force is applied rather than at  $t = -\infty$  as in (8.17) for the pre-acceleration solution (8.15). The difference is negligible for a charged sphere with a radius equal to the classical radius of the electron.)

## 8.4 Power Series Solution to General Equation of Motion

A series solution in powers of  $a$  to the general equation of motion for the charged insulator can be found by ignoring the correction function  $\eta(s)$  in (8.35), so that (8.35) becomes identical to (7.1), which has the three-vector form (7.12a)

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t)}{m_{es}} &= \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma \mathbf{u}) - \frac{4a}{3c} \left\{ \frac{d}{dt} \left[ \gamma^2 \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\gamma^4}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \mathbf{u} \right] \right. \\ &\quad \left. - \frac{\gamma^4}{c^2} \left[ |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2 + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} \right\} + O(a^2). \end{aligned} \quad (8.50)$$

An iterative procedure can be used to determine the power series solution to (8.50) (that is valid except near  $t = 0$  when the external force is first applied). Begin by integrating (8.50) with respect to  $t$ , to find the solution to  $\gamma \mathbf{u}$  as

$$\gamma \mathbf{u} = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^t \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t') dt' + O(a) \quad (8.51a)$$

or, solving for  $\mathbf{u}(t)$  alone

$$\mathbf{u}(t) = \frac{\mathbf{I}(t)}{\sqrt{1 + I^2(t)/c^2}} + O(a) \quad (8.51b)$$

where

$$\mathbf{I}(t) = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^t \mathbf{F}_{ext}(t') dt'. \quad (8.51c)$$

Substituting  $\mathbf{u}$  from (8.51b) into the radiation reaction terms on the right side of (8.50), making use of (8.51c), and collecting terms, one gets

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t)}{m_{es}} &= \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma \mathbf{u}) - \frac{4a}{3cm_{es}} \left\{ \frac{d}{dt}(\gamma_I \mathbf{F}_{ext}) \right. \\ &\quad \left. - \frac{\gamma_I}{c^2 m_{es}} \left[ F_{ext}^2 - \frac{(\mathbf{I} \cdot \mathbf{F}_{ext})^2}{c^2 \gamma_I^2} \right] \mathbf{I} \right\} + O(a^2), \\ (\gamma_I &\equiv \sqrt{1 + I^2/c^2}). \end{aligned} \quad (8.52)$$

The first two terms of the power series solution for  $\mathbf{u}$  can be found by integrating (8.52) with respect to  $t$ , to obtain

$$\gamma \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{I} + \frac{4a}{3cm_{es}} \left\{ \gamma_I \mathbf{F}_{ext} - \frac{1}{c^2 m_{es}} \int_0^t \gamma_I \left[ F_{ext}^2 - \frac{(\mathbf{I} \cdot \mathbf{F}_{ext})^2}{c^2 \gamma_I^2} \right] \mathbf{Id}t \right\} + O(a^2). \quad (8.53)$$

Again, a sufficient condition for the  $O(a^2)$  terms in (8.53) to be negligible at any particular time, is for the externally applied force to satisfy the inequalities in (8.47).

For rectilinear motion of the charged sphere, (8.53) reduces to

$$\gamma u = \frac{1}{m_{es}} \int_0^t F_{ext}(t') dt' + \frac{4a}{3cm_{es}} \int_0^t \gamma_I \dot{F}_{ext}(t') dt' + O(a^2). \quad (8.54)$$

(Equation (8.54) is easily proven by expressing  $d(\gamma_I F_{ext})/dt$  in (8.52) as  $\gamma_I \dot{F}_{ext} + I F_{ext}^2/c^2 \gamma_I m_{es}$  for rectilinear motion.) The equation (8.54) can be shown to agree with the previous power series solution (8.46) for the equation of rectilinear motion as follows. From the definitions (8.1b) and (8.5)

$$\frac{d(\gamma u)}{d\tau} = \cosh(\mathcal{V}/c) \frac{d\mathcal{V}}{d\tau} = \gamma \frac{d\mathcal{V}}{d\tau}. \quad (8.55)$$

Taking the derivative of  $\mathcal{V}$  in (8.46) with respect to proper time  $\tau$ , inserting it into (8.55), and changing the proper time to ordinary time via (8.1c), produces the equation

$$\frac{d(\gamma u)}{dt} = \frac{F_{ext}}{m_{es}} + \frac{4a}{3cm_{es}} \gamma \frac{dF_{ext}}{dt} + O(a^2). \quad (8.56)$$

After inserting  $u^2$  from (8.51b) into  $\gamma$  to show that  $\gamma = \gamma_I + O(a)$ , integrate (8.56) with respect to time to convert (8.56) to (8.54); QED.

The power series solution (8.53) is not very useful if the externally applied force is a function of the velocity of the charge, for example, when an external magnetic field is applied, because (8.51c) does not give an explicit expression for  $\mathbf{I}(t)$  when  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}$  depends on the velocity. In the case of a magnetic field  $\mathbf{B}_{ext}(t)$  applied to a negative charge (denoted by  $-e$  in this section and the following subsection 8.4.1)

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} = -e\mathbf{u} \times \mathbf{B}_{ext} \quad (8.57)$$

we can expand  $\gamma \mathbf{u}$  in the equation of motion (8.50) in the power series

$$\gamma \mathbf{u} = \boldsymbol{\alpha} + \boldsymbol{\beta}a + O(a^2). \quad (8.58)$$

From (8.58) the power series for  $\gamma$  and  $\mathbf{u}$  are found to be

$$\gamma = \gamma_\alpha \left( 1 + \frac{\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \boldsymbol{\beta}}{c^2 \gamma_\alpha^2} a \right) + O(a^2) \quad (8.59a)$$

and

$$\mathbf{u} = \frac{1}{\gamma_\alpha} \left[ \boldsymbol{\alpha} + a \left( \boldsymbol{\beta} - \frac{(\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \boldsymbol{\beta}) \boldsymbol{\alpha}}{c^2 \gamma_\alpha^2} \right) \right] + O(a^2) \quad (8.59b)$$

with

$$\gamma_\alpha \equiv \sqrt{1 + \alpha^2/c^2}. \quad (8.59c)$$

Taking the time derivative of  $\mathbf{u}$  in (8.59b) to obtain  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$ , and substituting  $\gamma$ ,  $\mathbf{u}$  and  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  into (8.50) with the external force from (8.57), one gets the equation of motion in the form

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{-\epsilon}{\gamma_\alpha m_{es}} \left[ \boldsymbol{\alpha} + a \left( \boldsymbol{\beta} - \frac{(\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \boldsymbol{\beta}) \boldsymbol{\alpha}}{c^2 \gamma_\alpha^2} \right) \right] \times \mathbf{B}_{ext} &= \dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}} + a \dot{\boldsymbol{\beta}} - \frac{4a}{3c} \left\{ \frac{d}{dt} (\gamma_\alpha \dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}) \right. \\ &\quad \left. - \frac{\gamma_\alpha}{c^2} \left[ |\dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}|^2 - \frac{(\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}})^2}{\gamma_\alpha^2 c^2} \right] \boldsymbol{\alpha} \right\} + O(a^2). \end{aligned} \quad (8.60)$$

Equating like powers of  $a$ , (8.60) divides into an infinite series of equations, the first two of which are

$$\frac{-\epsilon}{m_{es}} \boldsymbol{\alpha} \times \mathbf{B}_{ext} = \gamma_\alpha \dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}} = \frac{d}{dt} (\gamma_\alpha \boldsymbol{\alpha}) \quad (8.61a)$$

$$\frac{-\epsilon}{\gamma_\alpha m_{es}} \left[ \boldsymbol{\beta} - \frac{(\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \boldsymbol{\beta}) \boldsymbol{\alpha}}{c^2 \gamma_\alpha^2} \right] \times \mathbf{B}_{ext} = \dot{\boldsymbol{\beta}} - \frac{4}{3c} \left\{ \frac{d}{dt} (\gamma_\alpha \dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}) - \frac{\gamma_\alpha}{c^2} |\dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}|^2 \right\}. \quad (8.61b)$$

(The second equation in (8.61a) results from taking the dot product of  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$  with the first equation to show that  $\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}} = 0$  and thus  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma_\alpha$  are constant.)

Equation (8.61a), which is merely the equation of motion without the radiation reaction terms, determines  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$ . Equation (8.61b) determines  $\boldsymbol{\beta}$  when  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$  is substituted from (8.61a), that is, (8.61b) determines the perturbation in the motion of the charge caused by the radiation reaction. (Note that the Schott acceleration is included in (8.61b).)

#### 8.4.1 Synchrotron radiation

Let us solve equations (8.61) for the special case of the charge moving in a uniform magnetic field

$$\mathbf{B}_{ext} = B_0 \hat{\mathbf{z}} \quad (8.62)$$

where  $B_0$  is a constant. Under the assumption that the velocity of the charge is zero in the  $z$ -direction, the solution to (8.61a) can be written in polar coordinates  $(r, \theta)$  as

$$\boldsymbol{\alpha} = \alpha \hat{\theta} \quad (8.63a)$$

where  $\alpha$  is a constant related to the initial speed  $u_0 = u(t=0)$  of the charge by

$$\alpha = \gamma_\alpha u_0 = \frac{u_0}{\sqrt{1 - u_0^2/c^2}}. \quad (8.63b)$$

We also have from (8.61a) or (8.63)

$$|\dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}|^2 = \frac{\epsilon^2}{\gamma_\alpha^2 m_{es}^2} \alpha^2 B_0^2 \quad (8.64a)$$

and

$$\frac{d}{dt}(\gamma_\alpha \dot{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}) = \frac{-\epsilon^2 B_0^2}{\gamma_\alpha m_{es}^2} \boldsymbol{\alpha} \quad (8.64b)$$

which, when inserted into (8.61b), produces the equation of motion for  $\boldsymbol{\beta}$

$$\dot{\boldsymbol{\beta}} + \frac{\epsilon}{\gamma_\alpha m_{es}} \left[ \boldsymbol{\beta} - \frac{(\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \boldsymbol{\beta}) \boldsymbol{\alpha}}{c^2 \gamma_\alpha^2} \right] \times \mathbf{B}_0 \hat{\mathbf{z}} = \frac{-4\epsilon^2 B_0^2}{3cm_{es}^2} \gamma_\alpha \boldsymbol{\alpha}. \quad (8.65)$$

Take the scalar and vector products of (8.65) with  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$  to get the equations of motion for the  $\theta$  and  $r$  components of  $\boldsymbol{\beta}$

$$\frac{d\beta_\theta}{dt} = \frac{-4\epsilon^2 B_0^2 \gamma_\alpha \alpha}{3cm_{es}^2} \quad (8.66a)$$

$$\frac{d\beta_r}{dt} = \frac{\epsilon \alpha^2 B_0}{\gamma_\alpha^3 c^2 m_{es}} \beta_\theta. \quad (8.66b)$$

The solution to (8.66) after a time  $t$  is simply

$$\beta_\theta = \frac{-4\epsilon^2 B_0^2 u_0}{3m_{es}^2 c (1 - u_0^2/c^2)} t \quad (8.67a)$$

$$\beta_r = \frac{-4\epsilon^3 B_0^3 u_0^3}{3m_{es}^3 c^3 (1 - u_0^2/c^2)^{1/2}} \frac{t^2}{2} \quad (8.67b)$$

where  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma_\alpha$  have been written from (8.63b) in terms of the initial speed  $u_0$ .

With  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\beta}$  from (8.63) and (8.67) substituted into equations (8.59) for  $\mathbf{u}$  and  $\gamma$ , we find that the energy ( $W$ ) and velocity of the charge as a function of time are

$$W = m_{es} c^2 \gamma = \frac{m_{es} c^2}{(1 - u_0^2/c^2)^{1/2}} \left[ 1 - \frac{\epsilon^4 B_0^2 u_0^2 t}{6\pi\epsilon_0 m_{es}^3 c^5 (1 - u_0^2/c^2)^{1/2}} \right] + O(a^2) \quad (8.68)$$

$$\mathbf{u} = u_0 \left\{ \hat{\boldsymbol{\theta}} \left[ 1 - \frac{\epsilon^4 B_0^2 (1 - u_0^2/c^2)^{1/2}}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3 m_{es}^3} t \right] - \hat{\mathbf{r}} \frac{\epsilon^5 B_0^3 u_0^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 m_{es}^4 c^5} \frac{t^2}{2} \right\} + O(a^2) \quad (8.69)$$

where the radius  $a$  in (8.68) and (8.69) is written in terms of the mass  $m_{es}$  by means of (2.3).

The instantaneous radius of curvature of the trajectory of the charge is not given by the initial radius of curvature plus the integral over time of the radial velocity in (8.69). This is because the center of the radius of curvature does not remain at its initial position, the reference position for the polar coordinates of the velocity. The instantaneous radius of curvature  $\mathcal{R}(t)$  can be found from the general formula for the radius of curvature of a particle moving in a plane

$$\mathcal{R}(t) = \frac{u^3}{|\mathbf{u} \times \dot{\mathbf{u}}|}. \quad (8.70)$$

With  $\mathbf{u}$  and  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  from (8.69) or (8.59b) inserted into (8.70), we find the instantaneous radius of curvature, of the charge moving in a plane perpendicular to a uniform magnetic field, to be

$$\mathcal{R}(t) = \mathcal{R}_0 \left[ 1 - \frac{e^4 B_0^2 t}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3 m_{es}^3 (1 - u_0^2/c^2)^{1/2}} \right] + O(a^2) \quad (8.71a)$$

where  $\mathcal{R}_0$  is the initial radius of curvature

$$\mathcal{R}_0 = u_0/|\dot{\mathbf{a}}| = \frac{u_0 m_{es}}{e B_0 (1 - u_0^2/c^2)^{1/2}}. \quad (8.71b)$$

Note from (8.68) and (8.71) that the fractional change in energy and radius of curvature per unit time are approximately equal when the speed of the charge is approximately equal to the speed of light - in agreement with Shen's results [42]. The expression (8.68) predicts an energy loss per revolution ( $t = 2\pi\mathcal{R}_0/u_0$ ) that agrees exactly with Plass's result [41, eq. 147], and approximately with Schwinger's results [43, eq. I.10] when the speed of the charge equals approximately the speed of light (and, of course, when  $m_{es}$  is replaced by the mass of the electron).

## 8.5 The Finite Difference Equation of Motion

It was shown in Section 8.2 that if the evaluation of the self electromagnetic force is done properly near the time the external force is first applied, a correction function  $\eta(s)$  must multiply the radiation reaction in the equation of motion. Remarkably, this slight modification removes the pre-acceleration from the solution to the uncorrected equation of motion. Power series solutions obtained in Sections 8.3 and 8.4 to the original uncorrected equation of motion also eliminate the pre-acceleration, but at the expense of introducing spurious delta functions that do not satisfy the equation of motion at the time the external force is first applied.

Through the years a number of other methods have been proposed to eliminate the pre-acceleration that arises in the solution to the original uncorrected equation of motion (7.1) [44-48]. However, none of these alternative methods have been entirely successful because they either eliminate *a priori* all derivatives of acceleration [46-48], or they sum infinite series expansions that neglect nonlinear terms [44,45]. These latter methods [44,45] that have been proposed to eliminate the pre-acceleration or runaway solutions from the equation of motion involve determining explicitly the infinite series of  $O(a)$  terms in the self electromagnetic force in (3.3) of the moving charged insulator of radius  $a$ . Specifically, Page [14] wrote down, without showing the derivation, this infinite series and summed it in closed form to reveal that the self electromagnetic force in the proper frame of reference of the charge can be expressed as

$$\mathbf{F}_{ss}(t) = -\frac{e^2}{12\pi\epsilon_0 a^2 c} \mathbf{u}(t - 2a/c), \quad u = 0 \quad (8.72a)$$

or, in an inertial frame in which the charge is moving with nonzero velocity much less than the speed of light, as

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \frac{\epsilon^2}{12\pi\epsilon_0 a^2 c} [\mathbf{u}(t - 2a/c) - \mathbf{u}(t)], \quad (u/c)^2 \ll 1 \quad (8.72b)$$

*provided all nonlinear terms involving products of the time derivatives of the velocity are neglected and the correction function  $\eta$ , derived in Section 8.2, is ignored.*

Equations (8.72) can also be found by discarding all but the first series in the double infinite series that Schott [49] derived for the self electromagnetic force on the noncontracting sphere (Abraham's nonrelativistically rigid model rather than Lorentz's relativistically rigid model of the electron). The infinite number of discarded series involve nonlinear products in Schott's expression that would change for the relativistically rigid model of the electron; however, the linear first series is the same for both relativistically and nonrelativistically rigid models of the electron. (A simple proof of (8.72) is given in Appendix D.)

When the self electromagnetic force (8.72b) is used in the derivation of the equation of motion given in Chapter 5, we obtain

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}(t) = (m_{ins} + M_0)\ddot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\epsilon^2}{12\pi\epsilon_0 a^2 c} [\mathbf{u}(t - 2a/c) - \mathbf{u}(t)], \quad (u/c)^2 \ll 1 \quad (8.73)$$

for the nonrelativistic equation of motion. Again, the nonlinear product terms have been neglected in (8.73), and the negative bare mass  $M_0$  is given as  $-m_{es}/3$  in (5.11). (If the bare mass were omitted in (8.73), the rest mass of the charged shell would not equal  $m_{ins} + m_{es}$ .) The relativistic generalization of the finite difference equation (8.72b) has been derived by Caldriola [45].

Notwithstanding the appealing simplicity of the finite difference equation (8.73) and its relativistic generalization, there is little justification to accept them as valid equations of motion that are accurate beyond the usual radiation reaction terms, since (8.72) and (8.73) neglect all nonlinear product terms (involving derivatives of velocity), which are not necessarily negligible for the Lorentz model of the electron beyond the  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$  radiation reaction term.

It can be shown that the nonlinear and linear parts of the self electromagnetic force are both zero for certain radiationless motion of a *nonrelativistically* rigid spherical shell; namely, when the shell oscillates with an amplitude smaller than its radius and a period equal to  $2a/c$  [50-52]. These radiationless oscillations with the self electromagnetic force (8.72) equal to zero would not, in general, be self sustaining, that is,  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}$  would not equal zero in (8.73) except for the special case of  $m_{ins} + M_0$  equal to zero. (For Lorentz's relativistically rigid model of the electron, Pearle [52] has shown that bounded radiationless motions do not exist.)

The work of Herglotz [34] and Wildermuth [35], discussed in Section 8.2, would suggest that the finite difference (linearized) equation of motion (8.73) does not, in general, eliminate the pre-acceleration, that is, runaway solutions for  $t < 0$ . This can be proven for rectilinear motion by letting the velocity in (8.73) have  $\exp(qt)$  time dependence when  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}$  is set equal

to zero. The equation that results for  $q$ , when the material mass of the insulator is negligible, is then

$$e^{-2aq/c} = 1 - \frac{aq}{2c} \quad (8.74)$$

which has the positive real solution

$$q \approx \frac{2(1 - 5e^{-4})c}{1 - 4e^{-4}} \frac{c}{a} \approx 1.96 \frac{c}{a}. \quad (8.75)$$

(If the mass of the insulator is not negligible, the equation for  $q$  also has a real positive solution provided  $a$  is small enough for the value of  $m_{ins} + M_0$  to be negative.) This failure of the finite difference equation of motion (8.73) to eliminate the homogeneous runaway solutions, for  $t < 0$  as well as  $t > 0$  (so that pre-acceleration will still arise when the asymptotic condition (8.11) is applied), coupled with the fact that the finite difference equation (8.73) neglects all nonlinear terms involving products of the time derivatives of velocity, leaves little reason to prefer (8.73) (or its relativistic generalization) to the equation of motion that simply neglects the  $O(a)$  terms in (7.1). Moreover, like (7.1) the finite difference equation of motion (8.73) neglects the correction function  $\eta(s)$  in the rigorously derived equation of motion (8.35). And, as Section 8.2 shows, it is this small but important correction to the conventional equation of motion that eliminates the noncausal pre-acceleration.

## 8.6 Higher Order Terms in the Power Series Solution

The first two terms of the power series solution to the equation of motion (7.1) (which is the same as the corrected equation of motion (8.35) when the  $\eta$  correction function is omitted) have been derived directly from the equation of motion (7.1), and indirectly, for rectilinear motion, from the pre-acceleration solution (8.15). Of course, the first two terms of the power series solution can also be found by expanding the  $u(t - 2a/c)$  part of the finite difference equation of motion (8.73) in a Taylor series about  $t$ .

It may seem appropriate at this point to find the next term, that is, the third term in the power series solution to the equation of motion. One would begin by finding the third terms (linear and nonlinear terms multiplied by  $a$ ) in the self electromagnetic force of the relativistically rigid charged sphere in the manner that the  $1/a$  and radiation reaction terms were derived in Appendix B. Although this could be done, it would be a futile exercise in the case of the electron because Shen [53] has shown that the effect of including terms in the equation of motion of the electron beyond the radiation reaction terms is to introduce a change that is  $e^2/hc \approx 1/137$  of that introduced by quantum effects.

## 8.7 Renormalization of the Equation of Motion

The power series solutions in Sections 8.3 - 8.5 were derived from the equation of motion (7.1) for the charged insulator model of the electron. It was shown that these power series solutions

contain delta functions in the acceleration and higher derivatives of velocity that violate the equation of motion (7.1) at the initial time  $t = 0$  when the external force is first applied. More importantly, we found the fundamental reason why both the power series solution and the exact pre-acceleration solution to (7.1) do not give the correct solution for the motion of the charged insulator near  $t = 0$ . Namely, a scalar function, multiplying the radiation reaction for a small yet important time interval ( $0 < t \lesssim 2a/c$ ) was overlooked in the derivation of the original equation of motion (7.1). When the derivation is done properly, the corrected equation of motion (8.35) emerges instead of (7.1). Moreover, Section 8.2 shows that the solution to the corrected equation of motion (8.35), under the asymptotic condition of zero acceleration for zero external force as  $t$  approaches infinity, satisfies given initial conditions on velocity, and is free of noncausal pre-acceleration or spurious behavior at  $t = 0$ .

Equation (8.35) emerges as the correct covariant equation of motion of the charged insulating sphere of radius  $a$  (with  $m_{es} = 0$ ) when the external force is zero for  $t < 0$  and an analytic function of  $t$  for  $t > 0$ . However, this charged sphere is obviously not a valid classical model of the electron, if the electron is assumed to be a point charge, because the electrostatic mass of the charged sphere approaches an infinite value as its radius  $a$  approaches zero. If the mass is “renormalized” to the finite value  $m_e$  of the mass of the electron as  $a$  approaches zero, the  $O(a)$  terms in equation (8.35) vanish and (8.35) becomes

$$F_{ext}^i = m_e c^2 \frac{du^i}{ds} - \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0} \eta_0(s) \left( \frac{d^2 u^i}{ds^2} + u^i \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du^j}{ds} \right). \quad (8.76)$$

Equation (8.76) is identical to the Lorentz-Dirac renormalized equation of motion for the point electron [10], except for the correction function  $\eta_0(s)$  that multiplies the radiation reaction terms of (8.76). (As usual, it is assumed that the external force is applied at  $s = 0$  and is an analytic function of time for  $s > 0$ .) The function  $\eta_0(s)$  in (8.76) is equal to the function  $\eta(s)$ , defined below (8.35), as the radius  $a$  approaches zero. The value of  $\eta_0(s)$  is zero for  $s < 0$ , unity for  $s \gtrsim 2a$ , and (8.32) shows that it approaches zero like  $s^2$  or faster as  $s$  approaches zero from the positive (right) side.

The behavior of the solution to (8.76) can be determined from the results of Section 8.2 by letting the value of  $a$  in  $\eta_0(s)$  be arbitrarily small yet nonzero. For rectilinear motion, the change of variables at the beginning of Chapter 8 reduces (8.76) to

$$\frac{F_{ext}}{m_e} = \mathcal{V}' - \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 m_e c^3} \eta_0(\tau) \mathcal{V}''. \quad (8.77)$$

The solution to (8.77) for the acceleration  $\mathcal{V}'$  is given in (8.37) with  $3c/4a$  replaced by  $6\pi\epsilon_0 m_e c^3/e^2$  and, of course,  $m_{es}$  replaced with  $m_e$ . Specifically, the acceleration  $\mathcal{V}'$  is zero for  $\tau < 0$ ; it equals, as shown in (8.40),  $F_{ext}(0)/m_e$  at  $\tau = 0$ ; and for  $\tau \gtrsim 2a/c$  the solution is given in (8.38), that is

$$\mathcal{V}'(\tau) = \frac{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3}{e^2} \int_0^\infty F_{ext}(\tau + \tau') e^{-6\pi\epsilon_0 m_e (\tau + \tau')/c^2} d\tau', \quad \tau \gtrsim 2a/c. \quad (8.78a)$$

Since  $F_{ext}(\tau)$  is an analytic function of  $\tau$  for  $\tau > 0$ , assume  $F_{ext}(\tau + \tau')$  can be expanded in a power series about  $\tau$  to recast (8.78a) in terms of the time derivatives of the force

$$\mathcal{V}'(\tau) = \frac{1}{m_e} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 m_e c^3} \right)^n \frac{d^n F_{ext}(\tau)}{d\tau^n}, \quad \tau \gtrsim 2a/c. \quad (8.78b)$$

Between  $\tau = 0$  and  $\tau = 2a/c$  the acceleration rises smoothly from the initial value of  $F_{ext}(0)/m_e$  to its value in (8.78) at  $\tau = 2a/c$ . As the radius of the charge approaches zero the change in acceleration between  $\tau = 0$  and  $\tau = 2a/c = 0^+$  becomes increasingly abrupt, because  $\mathcal{V}'(0^+)$  as given in (8.78)

$$\mathcal{V}'(0^+) = \frac{1}{m_e} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 m_e c^3} \right)^n \frac{d^n F_{ext}(0^+)}{d\tau^n}, \quad \tau = 2a/c = 0^+ \quad (8.79)$$

does not, in general, equal the initial value

$$\mathcal{V}'(0) = \frac{F_{ext}(0)}{m_e} = \frac{F_{ext}(0^+)}{m_e}. \quad (8.80)$$

(It is assumed that  $F_{ext}(\tau)$  is a continuous function from the right at  $\tau = 0$  so that  $F_{ext}(0^+) = F_{ext}(0)$ .) This rapid rise in acceleration, to a value different from  $F_{ext}(0)/m_e$ , immediately after the external force is applied is a consequence of renormalizing the mass of the charge as its radius shrinks toward zero. Nonetheless, this rapid change in acceleration does not violate the renormalized equation of motion (8.76) because of the function  $\eta_0(s)$  multiplying the radiation reaction. Also, the velocity of the charge does not change during this acceleration between  $\tau = 0$  and  $\tau = 2a/c = 0^+$ . If the velocity is zero for  $\tau \leq 0$ , then

$$\mathcal{V}(0) = \mathcal{V}(0^+) = 0. \quad (8.81)$$

In summary, the renormalized version (8.76) of the corrected equation of motion (8.35) differs from the Lorentz-Dirac renormalized equation of motion for the point electron by the correction function multiplying the radiation reaction. This small difference allows a solution to the renormalized equation of motion for the point electron that, like the solution to the corrected equation of motion (8.35) for the extended electron, is free of pre-acceleration. The initial velocity of the point electron can be chosen zero. However, the acceleration times the renormalized mass, at the limitingly small time ( $\tau = 0^+$ ) after the external force is applied, does not equal the externally applied force, as it does for the extended electron, but depends on the initial values of the time derivatives of the external force as well.

In principle, the validity of the renormalized equation of motion (8.76) for describing the classical motion of an electron could be tested by determining experimentally whether the acceleration of an electron, immediately after the external force is applied, depended upon the initial time derivatives of the applied force as predicted in (8.79). In practice, it is not feasible to detect the extremely small coefficient,  $e^2/6\pi\epsilon_0 m_e c^3 \sim 10^{-23}$  seconds (equal to the time it takes light to traverse the classical radius of the electron), multiplying the derivatives of the applied force.

Fundamentally, renormalization of the mass of the charged sphere as its radius shrinks to zero is an attempt to extract the equation of motion of the point electron from the equation of motion of an extended charge distribution. Such attempts, as Dirac wrote [54], "bring one up against the problem of the structure of the electron, which has not yet received any satisfactory solution."

## Appendix A

# DERIVATION AND TRANSFORMATION OF SMALL-VELOCITY FORCE AND POWER

In this appendix, we derive the proper-frame force equation of motion (3.3) and the small-velocity Lorentz power equation of motion (3.1) directly from the self electromagnetic force and power integrals of the spherical shell of charge. We then transform (3.3) relativistically to obtain the force equation of motion (2.1) for arbitrary velocity. A relativistic transformation of (3.4), however, leads to the erroneous result (3.5) for the power equation of motion rather than the power equation of motion (2.4). We also show that (2.4) does not transform covariantly, thereby confirming that the general power equation of motion (2.4) is not produced by a relativistic transformation of the small velocity power equation of motion (3.4); see Section 3.1.

Lorentz [3] and numerous modern physics texts, such as [11, 15b, 31], have derived the Lorentz force equation of motion (3.3) in the proper (instantaneous rest) frame. But none, as far as I am aware, have directly derived the small-velocity power equation of motion (3.4), because it requires taking into account the variation of the velocity over the charge distribution. Of course, (3.4) could be obtained by letting  $u/c$  become much less than unity in the general power equation of motion (2.4), which was rigorously derived by Schott [13]. (As discussed in Section 3, Schott's impressive derivation is so involved and lengthy that it discourages a detailed re-examination. Thus we provide an alternative, simpler, yet rigorous derivation of the general force and power equations of motion, (2.1) and (2.4), in Appendix B.)

## A.1 Derivation of the Small-Velocity Force and Power

### A.1.1 Derivation of the proper-frame force

The self electromagnetic force on the spherical shell of charge in its proper (instantaneous rest) inertial frame of reference can be expressed by the Lorentz force integral in (3.1) with  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) = 0$ , that is

$$\mathbf{F}_{ee}(t) = \int_{charge} \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon, \quad \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) = 0 \quad (\text{A.1})$$

where the element of charge  $\rho(\mathbf{r}, t)dV$  in (3.1) is relabeled  $d\epsilon$  in (A.1). The self electric field  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  on the charge  $d\epsilon$  at position  $\mathbf{r}$  is produced by the remainder of the charge in the spherical shell. Specifically, the charge  $d\epsilon'$  at the position  $\mathbf{r}'(t')$  produces an electric field  $d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  given by [11]

$$d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{d\epsilon'}{4\pi\epsilon_0 \left[1 - \hat{\mathbf{R}}' \cdot \mathbf{u}/c\right]^3} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}'}{R'^2 c^2} \times \left[ \left( \hat{\mathbf{R}}' - \frac{\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t')}{c} \right) \times \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t') \right] + \frac{1}{R'^2} \left[ 1 - \frac{u^2(\mathbf{r}', t')}{c^2} \right] \left[ \hat{\mathbf{R}}' - \frac{\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t')}{c} \right] \right\} \quad (\text{A.2})$$

where  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t')$  and  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t')$  refer to the velocity and acceleration of the charge  $d\epsilon'$  at the retarded time

$$t' = t - \frac{R'}{c} \quad (\text{A.3})$$

that is

$$\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t') = \frac{d\mathbf{r}'(t')}{dt'} \quad (\text{A.4})$$

$$\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t') = \frac{d^2\mathbf{r}'(t')}{dt'^2}. \quad (\text{A.5})$$

The vector  $\mathbf{R}'$  is defined as the difference between the position  $\mathbf{r}$  of  $d\epsilon$  and the position  $\mathbf{r}'(t')$  of  $d\epsilon'$  at the retarded time  $t'$

$$\mathbf{R}' = \mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}'(t'). \quad (\text{A.6})$$

When one expands  $\mathbf{R}'$ ,  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t')$ , and  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t')$  about the present time  $t$ , as the radius of the charge shell becomes small, one obtains the following power series expansion of  $d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in (A.2)

$$d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{d\epsilon'}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{R^2} - \frac{1}{2c^2 R} \left[ \hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t) \hat{\mathbf{R}} + \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t) \right] - \frac{3}{8} \frac{|\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t)|^2}{c^4} \hat{\mathbf{R}} \right. \\ \left. + \frac{3}{4} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t)}{c^4} \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t) + \frac{3}{8} \frac{(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t))^2}{c^4} \hat{\mathbf{R}} + \frac{2}{3} \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t)}{c^3} + O(R) \right\} \quad (\text{A.7})$$

with  $\mathbf{R} = \mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}'(t)$ , and  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t) = 0$ . Equation (A.7) differs from the corresponding expression in [11] where the dependence of  $\mathbf{R}'$  in (A.6) upon the retarded time is ignored. Also, (A.7)

differs from the corresponding equation in [15b] and [31] as well as [11] by including the spatial dependence of the acceleration and its time derivative over the charge distribution. Both of these differences vanish, as we shall see below, when (A.7) is integrated over  $d\epsilon'$  to get  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and then  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  is integrated over  $d\epsilon$  in (A.1) to get the self electromagnetic force and the Lorentz force equation of motion. *These differences do not vanish in the subsequent derivation of the self electromagnetic power and thus cannot be ignored in the derivation of the power equation of motion.*

The acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t)$  of the charge  $d\epsilon'$  at the position  $\mathbf{r}'(t)$  can be written in terms of the acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t)$  of the center of the shell by using the requirement of special relativity that the spherical shell contracts to an oblate spheroid (to order  $R^2$ ) as the speed increases. Specifically, we find for  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t) = 0$

$$\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t) = \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t) - \frac{\mathbf{r}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t)}{c^2} \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t) + O(R^2) \quad (\text{A.8})$$

and

$$\ddot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t) = \ddot{\mathbf{u}}(t) + O(R) . \quad (\text{A.9})$$

Substituting (A.8) and (A.9) into (A.7) and integrating over  $d\epsilon'$  gives the final form for the self electric field at  $(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in terms of the acceleration ( $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$ ) and the time derivative of acceleration ( $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$ ) of the center of the shell of charge

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) &= \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int_{\text{charge}} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{R^2} + \frac{1}{2c^2 R} \left[ \frac{\mathbf{r}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{c^2} - 1 \right] [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\hat{\mathbf{R}} + \dot{\mathbf{u}}] \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{3}{8} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{c^4} [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 - |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2] + \frac{3(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4c^4} + \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + O(R) \right\} d\epsilon', \quad u = 0. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.10})$$

Next insert the self electric field from (A.10) into (A.1) and perform the double integration over the shell of charge. All the terms with an odd number of products of  $\hat{\mathbf{R}}$  or  $\mathbf{r}'$  integrate to zero and the remaining even product terms integrate to give the familiar expression for the self electromagnetic force in the proper frame of reference

$$\mathbf{F}_{\text{self}}(t) = \frac{-e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a), \quad u = 0 . \quad (\text{A.11})$$

Equating the sum of the externally applied force and the self electromagnetic force to zero, as Lorentz did in his original work [3], one obtains the Lorentz force equation of motion (3.3) in the proper frame of the spherical shell of charge.

### A.1.2 Derivation of the small-velocity power

The power delivered to the moving charge by the self electromagnetic forces within the charge distribution is given by the charge integral in (3.2), namely

$$P_{\text{self}}(t) = \int_{\text{charge}} \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon \quad (\text{A.12})$$

where again the element of charge  $\rho(\mathbf{r}, t)dV$  in (3.2) is relabeled as  $d\epsilon$  in (A.12). The velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  of the charge distribution in (A.12) is arbitrary. For small velocity,  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  can be written in terms of the velocity and acceleration of the center of the shell by using the information that the spherical shell contracts to an oblate spheroid (to order  $R^2$ ) as the speed of the charge increases; specifically

$$\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{u}(t) - \frac{\mathbf{r} \cdot \mathbf{u}(t)}{c^2} \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t) + O\left(\frac{u^2}{c^2}, R^2\right). \quad (\text{A.13})$$

Repeating the derivation that led to (A.10), with small-velocity instead of zero velocity, shows that (A.10) also remains valid to order  $u^2/c^2$ , that is

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) &= \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int_{\text{charge}} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{R^2} + \frac{1}{2c^2 R} \left[ \frac{\mathbf{r}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{c^2} - 1 \right] [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\hat{\mathbf{R}} + \dot{\mathbf{u}}] \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{3}{8} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{c^4} [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 - |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2] + \frac{3(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4c^4} + \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + O\left(\frac{u^2}{c^2}, R\right) \right\} d\epsilon'. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.14})$$

Substitution of  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from (A.14) and  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from (A.13) into (A.12) allows  $P_{el}(t)$  to be written as

$$\begin{aligned} P_{el}(t) &= \mathbf{u}(t) \cdot \int_{\text{charge}} \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) d\epsilon - \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t) \cdot}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int \int_{\text{charge}} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}(\mathbf{r} \cdot \mathbf{u}(t))}{R^2} d\epsilon' d\epsilon \\ &\quad + O\left(\frac{u^2}{c^2}, a\right). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.15})$$

The integral of the electric field in (A.15) is just the self electromagnetic force given in (A.11). The second integral in (A.15) is the extra term that arises because the velocity of the charge distribution varies with position around the shell. It evaluates to

$$- \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t) \cdot}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int \int_{\text{charge}} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}(\mathbf{r} \cdot \mathbf{u}(t))}{R^2 c^2} d\epsilon' d\epsilon = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}. \quad (\text{A.16})$$

The self electromagnetic power can thus be written as

$$P_{el}(t) = \mathbf{u} \cdot \mathbf{F}_{el}(t) - \frac{\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}} + O\left(\frac{u^2}{c^2}, a\right) \quad (\text{A.17})$$

or

$$P_{el}(t) = \frac{-5\epsilon^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a), \quad \frac{u^2}{c^2} \ll 1. \quad (\text{A.18})$$

Setting the sum of the power delivered by the externally applied force  $\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u}$  and the self electromagnetic power  $P_{el}(t)$  equal to zero, as Lorentz did in his original work [3], one obtains the power equation of motion (3.4) for charge shells with small velocity ( $u^2/c^2 \ll 1$ ).

## A.2 Relativistic Transformation of the Small-Velocity Force and Power

As explained in Section 3.1 the point relativistic transformations do not necessarily apply to the integrated force and power that comprise the right sides of the Lorentz force and power equations of motion, (3.3) and (3.4), respectively. Thus, it is not mathematically rigorous to transform the small-velocity equations of motion, (3.3) and (3.4), to obtain the corresponding equations of motion, (2.1) and (2.4), for an arbitrary center velocity of the charge distribution. Nevertheless, a relativistic transformation of the proper-frame force equation of motion (3.3) does yield the general force equation of motion (2.1); whereas, a relativistic transformation of the small-velocity power equation of motion (3.4) does not yield the general power equation of motion (2.4). The proofs of these results follow.

### A.2.1 Relativistic transformation of the proper-frame force

Let  $K$  be the proper inertial reference frame in which equation (3.3) is derived, and  $K'$  be the arbitrary inertial frame in which the velocity of the center of the charged shell is  $\mathbf{u}'$ . Thus  $K$  has velocity  $\mathbf{u}'$  with respect to  $K'$ . Equation (3.3) can be divided into components parallel and perpendicular to the velocity  $\mathbf{u}'$

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}^{\parallel} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}_{\parallel}}{a} - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\parallel}}{c} \right] + O(a) \quad (\text{A.19a})$$

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}^{\perp} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp}}{a} - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp}}{c} \right] + O(a). \quad (\text{A.19b})$$

From the relativistic transformation of force

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}'^{\parallel} = \mathbf{F}_{ext}^{\parallel} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}_{\parallel}}{a} - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\parallel}}{c} \right] + O(a) \quad (\text{A.20a})$$

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext}'^{\perp} = \mathbf{F}_{ext}^{\perp}/\gamma' = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2 \gamma'} \left[ \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp}}{a} - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp}}{c} \right] + O(a), \quad (\text{A.20b})$$

$$\gamma' = \left( 1 - u'^2/c^2 \right)^{-1/2}.$$

The relativistic transformation of acceleration and its time derivative

$$\dot{\mathbf{u}}_{\parallel} = \gamma'^3 \dot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\parallel} \quad (\text{A.21a})$$

$$\dot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp} = \gamma'^2 \dot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\perp} \quad (\text{A.21b})$$

$$\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\parallel} = \gamma'^4 \ddot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\parallel} + \frac{3\gamma'^6}{c^2} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}'|^2 \mathbf{u}' \quad (\text{A.22a})$$

$$\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp} = \gamma'^3 \ddot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\perp} + \frac{3\gamma'^5}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}') \dot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\perp} \quad (\text{A.22b})$$

substituted into (A.20) produce the equations in the arbitrary  $K'$  system

$$\mathbf{F}'_{ext}^{\parallel} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{\gamma'^3 \dot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\parallel}}{a} - \frac{\gamma'^4 \ddot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\parallel}}{c} - \frac{3\gamma'^6}{c^3} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\parallel}|^2 \mathbf{u}' \right] + O(a) \quad (\text{A.23a})$$

$$\mathbf{F}'_{ext}^{\perp} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{\gamma' \dot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\perp}}{a} - \frac{\gamma'^2}{c} \ddot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\perp} - \frac{3\gamma'^4}{c^3} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}') \dot{\mathbf{u}}'_{\perp} \right] + O(a). \quad (\text{A.23b})$$

Adding (A.23a) to (A.23b), combining terms and removing the primes, results in the transformed equation of motion

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}_{ext} = & \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \frac{d}{dt} (\gamma \mathbf{u}) - \frac{e^2 \gamma^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \dot{\mathbf{u}} \right. \\ & \left. + \frac{\gamma^2}{c^2} \left[ \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] \mathbf{u} \right\} + O(a) \end{aligned} \quad (\text{A.24})$$

which is identical to the general equation of motion (2.1) obtained from the self electromagnetic force calculated directly in an inertial frame in which the charge has arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ .

### A.2.2 Relativistic transformation of the small-velocity power

In an inertial frame  $K$  in which the charge has limitingly small center velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ , we have from equation (3.4)

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{5\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4a} - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{c} \right] \cdot \mathbf{u} + O(a), \quad u \rightarrow 0. \quad (\text{A.25})$$

In the  $K'$  frame, moving with velocity  $-\mathbf{u}'$  with respect to  $K$  (as  $u$  approaches zero), the velocity of the particle is  $\mathbf{u}'$ . Thus, in the  $K'$  frame (A.25) becomes

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u}' = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \left[ \frac{5\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4a} - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{c} \right] \cdot \mathbf{u}' + O(a). \quad (\text{A.26})$$

From the relativistic transformations of  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}$ ,  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  and  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$  in (A.20a), (A.21a) and (A.22a), we find

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u}' = \mathbf{F}'_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u}' \quad (\text{A.27})$$

and

$$\left[ \frac{5\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4a} - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{c} \right] \cdot \mathbf{u}' = \left[ \frac{5\gamma'^3 \dot{\mathbf{u}}'}{4a} - \frac{\gamma'^4 \ddot{\mathbf{u}}'}{c} - \frac{3\gamma'^6}{c^3} |\dot{\mathbf{u}}'|^2 \mathbf{u}' \right] \cdot \mathbf{u}'. \quad (\text{A.28})$$

Substituting (A.27) and (A.28) into (A.26) and removing the primes, we obtain the general power equation of motion (3.5)

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \frac{5e^2}{24\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d\gamma}{dt} - \frac{e^2 \gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a) \quad (\text{A.29})$$

corresponding to the small-velocity power equation of motion (3.4). Unlike the transformed force equation of motion, (A.29) is not identical to the power equation of motion (2.4) obtained from the self electromagnetic power calculated directly in an inertial frame in which the charge has arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}$ . As explained in Section 3.1, we cannot rigorously apply the point relativistic transformations to the small velocity self electromagnetic force and power expressions to find the self electromagnetic force and power of an arbitrarily moving charge, because the charge is distributed over an extended region of space and not concentrated at a single point moving with a uniform velocity. The distributed charge motion does not change the final result of the self electromagnetic force calculation, but does change the  $1/a$  term in the self electromagnetic power calculation, and the transformation properties of the self electromagnetic power. Indeed, the next section of this Appendix A demonstrates that the power equation of motion (2.4) does not transform covariantly.

### A.3 Noncovariance of the Power Equation

Begin with the power equation of motion (2.4) in an arbitrary inertial frame  $K_a$

$$\mathbf{F}_{ext} \cdot \mathbf{u} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt} \left( \gamma - \frac{1}{4\gamma} \right) - \frac{e^2 \gamma^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \mathbf{u} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{3\gamma^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 \right] + O(a). \quad (\text{A.30})$$

In an inertial frame  $K'_w$  moving with velocity  $\mathbf{w}$  with respect to  $K_a$ , the relativistic transformations of  $\mathbf{F}_{ext}$ ,  $\mathbf{u}$ ,  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$ ,  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$  and  $\gamma$  in terms of the corresponding primed variables in the  $K'$  frame recast (A.30) in the form

$$(\mathbf{u}' + \mathbf{w}) \cdot \left\{ \mathbf{F}'_{ext} - \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \left( 1 - \frac{1}{4\gamma'^2 \gamma_w^2 (1 + \mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{w}/c^2)^2} \right) \frac{d(\gamma' \mathbf{u}')}{dt'} \right. \\ \left. + \frac{e^2 \gamma'^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}') \dot{\mathbf{u}}' \right. \right. \\ \left. \left. + \frac{\gamma'^2}{c^2} \left( \mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}')^2 \right) \mathbf{u}' \right] + O(a) \right\} = 0. \quad (\text{A.31})$$

If (A.31) is to be independent of  $\mathbf{w}$  and hold for all  $\mathbf{w}(w < c)$ , then the terms in the curly brackets of (A.31) must be zero, that is

$$\mathbf{F}'_{ext} = \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \left[ 1 - \frac{1}{4\gamma'^2 \gamma_w^2 (1 + \mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{w}/c^2)^2} \right] \frac{d(\gamma' \mathbf{u}')}{dt'} - \frac{e^2 \gamma'^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' \right. \\ \left. + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}') \dot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{\gamma'^2}{c^2} \left( \mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}')^2 \right) \mathbf{u}' \right] + O(a). \quad (\text{A.32})$$

Because of the  $1/4$  term in (A.32), the form of this equation (A.32) depends explicitly on the velocity  $\mathbf{w}$  of the  $K'_w$  inertial frame. Thus the form of (A.32) is not relativistically invariant

with respect to a change of inertial frames, that is, the left and right sides of the power equation of motion (2.4) do not transform covariantly because of the  $\frac{-e^2}{2m_0c^2} \frac{d}{dt}(\frac{1}{r})$  term. Of course, it is this very term that the internal binding forces eliminate from the power equation of motion (2.4); see Chapter 4.

## Appendix B

# DERIVATION OF FORCE AND POWER AT ARBITRARY VELOCITY

In this appendix the self electromagnetic force and power are derived from equations (3.1) and (3.2) for the shell of charge moving with arbitrary velocity. The  $1/a$  terms are derived from the space integrals in (3.1) and (3.2) evaluated for arbitrary, time-varying velocity (unlike the traditional heuristic derivation which assumes a constant velocity charge). The radiation reaction terms are found from the charge (rather than the space) integrals in (3.1) and (3.2) evaluated for a shell of charge moving with arbitrary, time-varying velocity.

### B.1 The $1/a$ Terms of Self Electromagnetic Force and Power

The self electromagnetic force and power of the moving shell of charge can be written as space integrals of the electromagnetic fields of the moving charge [12, sec. 2.5, eq. (25) and sec. 2.19, eq. (6)]

$$\mathbf{F}'_e(t') = -\epsilon_0 \frac{d}{dt'} \int_V \mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', t') \times \mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', t') dV' + \int_S \mathbf{T}' \cdot \hat{\mathbf{n}}' dS' \quad (\text{B.1})$$

$$P'_e(t') = -\frac{\epsilon_0}{2} \frac{d}{dt'} \int_V (E'^2 + c^2 B'^2) dV' - \epsilon_0 c^2 \int_S (\mathbf{E}' \times \mathbf{B}') \cdot \hat{\mathbf{n}}' dS' \quad (\text{B.2})$$

where  $\mathbf{T}'$  is Maxwell's stress tensor and the primes denote quantities in a  $K'$  inertial frame in which the charge shell has arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}'(t')$ . The volume  $V$  is enclosed by the surface  $S$ , which encloses the moving charge distribution.

The force on any part of the charged oblate spheroid (with major axis  $2a$  and minor axis  $2a(1-u'^2/c^2)^{1/2}$  in the  $K'$  frame will be caused by the position of the rest of the charge at

an earlier time. In particular, the force field on the leading end of the particle will have left the trailing end of the particle in a time  $\Delta t$  given approximately for small radius  $a$  by

$$(c - u')\Delta t = 2a\sqrt{1 - u'^2/c^2} \quad \text{or} \quad \Delta t = \frac{2a}{c} \sqrt{\frac{1 + u'/c}{1 - u'/c}}. \quad (\text{B.3})$$

In this time interval  $\Delta t$  the charge will have traveled a distance  $\Delta d$  given approximately by

$$\Delta d = u'\Delta t = \frac{2u'a}{c} \sqrt{\frac{1 + u'/c}{1 - u'/c}}. \quad (\text{B.4})$$

Equation (B.4) says that the motion of the charge, when the charge is farther away from its present position than some finite number times the radius  $a$ , will not affect the self electromagnetic force calculation. Thus, we can assume, with no loss of generality in the derivation, that the charge had uniform velocity when evaluating the fields for  $r'$  greater than  $La$  where  $L$  is an indefinitely large but finite number. In other words, if we choose the radius of the surface  $S$  larger by a factor  $L$  then the major radius of the oblate spheroidal charge distribution, the stress tensor  $\bar{\mathbf{T}}$  and the Poynting vector  $\mathbf{E}' \times \mathbf{B}'$  in the surface integrals of (B.1) and (B.2) can be assumed those of a charge distribution moving with constant velocity. Because each of these surface integrals is zero for a constant velocity charge distribution, (B.1) and (B.2) can be written in terms of the volume integrals alone

$$\mathbf{F}'_{el}(t') = -\epsilon_0 \frac{d}{dt'} \int_{V_a} \mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', t') \times \mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', t') dV' \quad (\text{B.5})$$

$$P'_{el}(t') = -\frac{\epsilon_0}{2} \frac{d}{dt'} \int_{V_a} (E'^2 + c^2 B'^2) dV' \quad (\text{B.6})$$

with  $V_a$  denoting a finite volume that encloses the charge distribution and having a radius  $La$  proportional to the dimension  $c$  of the charged shell. The fact that the radius  $La$  of the volume  $V_a$  approaches zero as  $a$  approaches zero, and yet  $L$  is an indefinitely large number, is used in the following evaluations of the  $1/a$  terms of self force and power.

### B.1.1 Evaluation of $1/a$ term of self electromagnetic force

We want to evaluate the space integral in (B.5) at each instant of time  $t'$ . To begin, let this instant of time be  $t' = 0$ , in order to simplify the integral in (B.5) to

$$\mathbf{I}_F = \int_{V_a} \mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) \times \mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) dV'. \quad (\text{B.7})$$

Next write the fields,  $\mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$  and  $\mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$  in the  $K'$  frame in terms of the fields in a proper inertial frame  $K$  at rest instantaneously with the center of the charge distribution at  $t' = 0$ . Assume that the origins of the  $K$  and  $K'$  frames coincide at  $t = t' = 0$ . Then the relativistic transformations of the fields are given by

$$\mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \boldsymbol{\alpha}' \cdot [\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) - \mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)] \quad (\text{B.8a})$$

$$\mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \bar{\alpha}' \cdot [\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)/c^2] \quad (\text{B.8b})$$

$$\bar{\alpha}' = \gamma' \hat{\mathbf{I}} + (1 - \gamma') \hat{\mathbf{u}}' \hat{\mathbf{u}}', \quad \gamma' = (1 - u'^2/c^2)^{-1/2} \quad (\text{B.8c})$$

with

$$\mathbf{r}_\perp = \mathbf{r}'_\perp \quad (\text{B.9a})$$

$$\mathbf{r}_\parallel = \gamma' \mathbf{r}'_\parallel \quad (\text{B.9b})$$

$$t = -\gamma' \mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}'/c^2 \quad (\text{B.9c})$$

where the subscripts  $\perp$  and  $\parallel$  mean perpendicular and parallel to the center velocity  $\mathbf{u}'$ .

Substitute (B.8) and (B.9) into (B.7) and make the change of integration variable

$$\mathbf{r} = \mathbf{r}'_\perp + \gamma' \mathbf{r}'_\parallel \quad (\text{B.10a})$$

so that

$$dV = \gamma' dV' \quad (\text{B.10b})$$

and (B.7) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{I}_F = \frac{1}{\gamma'} \int_{V_a} \bar{\alpha}' \cdot & [\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2) - \mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2)] \\ & \times \bar{\alpha}' \cdot [\mathbf{B} + \mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}/c^2] dV'. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.11})$$

Since we have determined in Appendix C the proper-frame electric and magnetic fields,  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , at a fixed time  $t$ , the integral of the fields in (B.11) could be evaluated if it weren't for the fact that  $t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2$  is not fixed but varies with the integration variable  $\mathbf{r}$ . Fortunately, this difficulty can be overcome, when evaluating the  $1/a$  term, by expanding  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2)$  and  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2)$  about the fixed time  $t = 0$ ; specifically

$$\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) + \frac{\partial \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)}{\partial t} t + \dots \quad (\text{B.12a})$$

$$\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0) + \frac{\partial \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)}{\partial t} t + \dots \quad (\text{B.12b})$$

From Maxwell's equations all the time derivatives of  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  and  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  can be written in terms of the spatial derivatives

$$\frac{\partial \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)}{\partial t} = -\nabla \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) \quad (\text{B.13a})$$

$$\frac{\partial \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)}{\partial t} = c^2 \nabla \times \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0) \quad (\text{B.13b})$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)}{\partial t^2} = -\nabla \times \frac{\partial \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)}{\partial t} = -c^2 \nabla \times \nabla \times \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0) \quad (\text{B.13c})$$

etc.

Substitution of the time derivatives from (B.13) converts (B.12) to

$$\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) + c^2 \nabla \times \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)t + \dots \quad (\text{B.14a})$$

$$\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0) - \nabla \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)t + \dots \quad (\text{B.14b})$$

When the proper-frame electric and magnetic fields,  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$ ,  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  and their curls, are inserted from (C.1) and (C.5) of Appendix C into the right sides of (B.14), and the resulting fields,  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ , are inserted into the integrand of (B.11) with  $t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2$ , one finds that the  $\mathbf{B}$  field in the integrand of (B.11) does not contribute to the  $1/a$  term of the integral and that only the static part of the  $\mathbf{E}$  field contributes to the  $1/a$  term. In more detail

$$\mathbf{I}_F = \frac{1}{\gamma'} \int_{V_a(a \rightarrow 0)} [\boldsymbol{\alpha}' \cdot \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)] \times [\boldsymbol{\alpha}' \cdot (\mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0))/c^2] dV + O(1) \quad (\text{B.15})$$

or since  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}' \cdot (\mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}) = \gamma' \mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}$  and  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}' \cdot \mathbf{E} = \gamma' \mathbf{E} + (1 - \gamma')(\hat{\mathbf{u}}' \cdot \mathbf{E})\hat{\mathbf{u}}'$

$$\mathbf{I}_F = \int_{V_a(a \rightarrow 0)} \left\{ \mathbf{u}' \left[ \gamma' E^2 + (1 - \gamma')(\hat{\mathbf{u}}' \cdot \mathbf{E})^2 \right] - (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{E})\mathbf{E} \right\} dV + O(1). \quad (\text{B.16})$$

The electric field  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  is found by integrating expression (C.1) to get

$$\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) = \begin{cases} \frac{e}{4\pi\epsilon_0 r^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} + O(1/r), & r > a \\ O(1/a), & r < a. \end{cases} \quad (\text{B.17})$$

Because  $V_a \rightarrow 0$  as  $a \rightarrow 0$ , the integration variable  $r \rightarrow 0$  as  $a \rightarrow 0$  and we are allowed to use this small  $r$  approximation of (C.1) for  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$ . With  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  from (B.17) substituted into the integrand, the integral in (B.16) can be evaluated for large  $L$  to give

$$\mathbf{I}_F = \frac{e^2 \mathbf{u}'}{4\pi\epsilon_0^2 ac^2} \left[ \gamma' + \frac{1 - \gamma'}{3} - \frac{1}{3} \right] + O(1) = \frac{e^2 \gamma' \mathbf{u}'}{6\pi\epsilon_0^2 ac^2} + O(1). \quad (\text{B.18})$$

For the sake of simplifying the relativistic transformations, (B.18) was derived for a specific instant of time  $t' = 0$ . This instant of time could be any instant of time. Thus (B.18) holds for arbitrary time  $t'$ , and (B.18) can be substituted into (B.5) to give the  $1/a$  term of the self electromagnetic force

$$\mathbf{F}'_{ee}(t') = -\frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 ac^2} \frac{d}{dt'} (\gamma' \mathbf{u}') + O(1) \quad (\text{B.19})$$

in the arbitrary  $K'$  frame.

### B.1.2 Evaluation of $1/a$ term of self electromagnetic power

Proceeding with the evaluation of the self power integral in (B.6)

$$I_P = \int_{V_a} (E'^2 + c^2 B'^2) dV'$$

in the same manner as in the previous section for the self force integral, one gets

$$I_P = \frac{1}{\gamma'} \int_{V_a(a \rightarrow 0)} \left[ |\bar{\alpha}' \cdot \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)|^2 + \gamma' |\mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}'|^2 / c^2 \right] dV + O(1). \quad (\text{B.20})$$

With  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  inserted from (B.17), (B.20) integrates for large  $L$  to

$$\begin{aligned} I_P &= \frac{\epsilon^2}{4\pi\epsilon_0^2 a} \left[ \gamma' + \frac{1}{3} \left( \frac{1}{\gamma'} - \gamma' \right) + \frac{2u'^2}{2c^2} \gamma' \right] + O(1) \\ &= \frac{\epsilon^2 \gamma'}{4\pi\epsilon_0^2 a} \left( 1 + \frac{u'^2}{3c^2} \right) + O(1) \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.21})$$

which, when inserted into (B.6), gives

$$P'_{ef}(t') = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{8\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt'} \left[ \gamma' \left( 1 + \frac{u'^2}{3c^2} \right) \right] + O(1) \quad (\text{B.22a})$$

or equivalently

$$P'_{ef}(t') = \frac{-\epsilon^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt'} \left( \gamma' - \frac{1}{4\gamma'} \right) + O(1) \quad (\text{B.22b})$$

for the  $1/a$  term of the self electromagnetic power in the arbitrary  $K'$  frame.

## B.2 Radiation Reaction of Self Electromagnetic Force and Power

The above derivation for the  $1/a$  terms of the self electromagnetic force and power in an arbitrary inertial frame from the momentum and energy integrals in (B.5) and (B.6) does not extend easily to finding the radiation reaction ( $O(1)$ ) terms of the self force and power because an infinite number of terms in the series expansion (B.14) of  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  contribute to the  $O(1)$  terms of the momentum and energy integrals. Fortunately, we can find the radiation reaction terms of the self force and power from the charge integrals of (2.1) and (3.2).

### B.2.1 Evaluation of the radiation reaction force

To determine the  $O(1)$  terms of the self electromagnetic force in a  $K'$  inertial frame in which the shell of charge is moving with arbitrary velocity, we shall evaluate the charge integral in (3.1) at an arbitrary instant of time  $t'$ . To reduce the algebra, let this arbitrary time be chosen as  $t' = 0$ , initially, so the self electromagnetic force in the  $K'$  frame can be written

$$\mathbf{F}_{ee} = \int_{\text{charge}} \rho'(\mathbf{r}', 0) [\mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) + \mathbf{u}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) \times \mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)] dV'. \quad (\text{B.23})$$

The electric and magnetic fields,  $\mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$  and  $\mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$ , in (B.23) can be expressed by means of the relativistic transformations (B.8) and (B.9), in terms of the fields in the proper frame  $K$  at rest instantaneously with the center of the charge distribution at  $t' = 0$ . Since (C.7) of Appendix C can be used to show that  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in (B.8) contributes only to terms of higher order than  $O(1)$ ,  $\mathbf{E}'$  and  $\mathbf{B}'$  in (B.23) can be written simply from (B.8) as

$$\mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \boldsymbol{\alpha}' \cdot \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) \quad (\text{B.24a})$$

$$\mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \gamma' \mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) / c^2 \quad (\text{B.24b})$$

where  $\boldsymbol{\alpha}'$  is defined in (B.8c),  $\mathbf{r}$  and  $t$  are given in (B.9), and  $\mathbf{u}'$  is the velocity of the center of the charge distribution.

The velocity  $\mathbf{u}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$  of the charge distribution in the  $K'$  frame can be written in terms of the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  in the proper frame by means of the relativistic transformation

$$\mathbf{u}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \frac{\frac{\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)}{\gamma'} + \mathbf{u}' \left[ \frac{\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}'}{u'^2} \left( 1 - \frac{1}{\gamma'} \right) + 1 \right]}{1 + \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}' / c^2}. \quad (\text{B.25})$$

Similarly, the charge density  $\rho'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$  in (B.23) transforms relativistically to the proper  $K$  frame as

$$\rho'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \gamma' \rho(\mathbf{r}, t) \left[ 1 + \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) \cdot \mathbf{u}' / c^2 \right] \quad (\text{B.26})$$

with  $\mathbf{r}$  and  $t$  again given in (B.9). The velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and the charge density  $\rho(\mathbf{r}, t)$  of the charge distribution at  $t = -\gamma' \mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}' / c^2 = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r} / c^2$  in the  $K$  frame can be expanded about  $t = 0$  to give

$$\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t) = -\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, 0)(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}) / c^2 + O(r^2) \quad (\text{B.27})$$

$$\rho(\mathbf{r}, t) = \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0) - \frac{\partial \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0)}{\partial t} \frac{\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}}{c^2} + O(r^2). \quad (\text{B.28})$$

Because  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  equals zero for a relativistically rigid, nonrotating charge distribution, we have  $\partial \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0) / \partial t = -\nabla \cdot [\rho(\mathbf{r}, 0) \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, 0)] = 0$ , and (B.28) becomes simply

$$\rho(\mathbf{r}, t) = \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0) + O(r^2). \quad (\text{B.29})$$

Substituting  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from (B.27) and  $\rho(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from (B.29) into (B.26) gives

$$\rho'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \gamma' \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0) \left[ 1 + \frac{(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, 0))(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r})}{c^3} \right] + O(r^2) \quad (\text{B.30})$$

for the charge density in the  $K'$  frame. Similarly, substituting (B.27) into (B.25) and expanding in powers of  $r$  gives

$$\mathbf{u}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) = \mathbf{u}' - \left[ \bar{\mathbf{I}}\gamma' + \frac{\mathbf{u}'\mathbf{u}'}{u'^2}(1 - \gamma') \right] \cdot \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, 0)(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r})}{\gamma'^2 c^2} + O(r^2). \quad (\text{B.31})$$

The acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  of the charge distribution in the proper frame was given previously in (A.8) in terms of its center acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$ ; thus (A.8) shows that (B.30) and (B.31) remain valid to  $O(r^2)$  when the acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  is replaced by the center acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$ .

Substitute into (B.23) the expressions (B.24) for  $\mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$  and  $\mathbf{B}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$ , (B.30) for  $\rho'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$ , (B.31) for  $\mathbf{u}'(\mathbf{r}', 0)$  (all with  $\mathbf{r}$  and  $t$  replaced from (B.9) and the center acceleration  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  replacing  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  in (B.30) and (B.31)); then make the change of integration variable from  $\mathbf{r}'$  to  $\mathbf{r}_\perp + \mathbf{r}_\parallel/\gamma'$  to obtain

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}'_{el}(0) = & \int_{charge} \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0) \left[ 1 - \frac{(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r})}{c^4} + O(r^2) \right] \left[ \bar{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}' \cdot \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) + \frac{\gamma'}{c^2} \left\{ \mathbf{u}' \right. \right. \\ & \left. \left. - \left[ \bar{\mathbf{I}}\gamma' + \frac{\mathbf{u}'\mathbf{u}'}{u'^2}(1 - \gamma') \right] \cdot \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r})}{\gamma'^2 c^2} + O(r^2) \right\} \times (\mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)) \right] dV \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.32})$$

with  $t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2$ . We want to insert  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from (B.14a) into the integrand of (B.32); specifically

$$\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) + c^2 \nabla \times \mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)t - c^2 \nabla \times \nabla \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) \frac{t^2}{2} + \dots \quad (\text{B.33})$$

with  $t = -\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r}/c^2$ . When one replaces  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  and  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  in (B.33) by their integral values given in (C.1) and (C.5), one finds

$$\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) + \text{terms odd in } \hat{\mathbf{r}} + \frac{1}{a}(\text{terms even in } \hat{\mathbf{r}}). \quad (\text{B.34})$$

As the radius  $a$  of the charged sphere approaches zero, the terms odd in  $\hat{\mathbf{r}}$  in (B.34) integrate to zero in (B.32). The  $1/a$  terms in (B.34) integrate to give  $1/a$  terms when multiplied by the terms of order unity in the integrand of (B.32), and zero when multiplied by the terms of order  $r$  and higher in (B.32). Also, as  $a$  approaches zero, the  $O(r^2)$  terms in (B.32) integrate to zero. In all, (B.32) becomes

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{F}'_{el}(0) = & \left( \frac{1}{a} \right) + \int_{charge} \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0) \left[ 1 - \frac{(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r})}{c^4} \right] \left[ \bar{\boldsymbol{\alpha}}' \cdot \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0) \right. \\ & \left. + \frac{\gamma'}{c^2} \left\{ \mathbf{u}' - \left[ \bar{\mathbf{I}}\gamma' + \frac{\mathbf{u}'\mathbf{u}'}{u'^2}(1 - \gamma') \right] \cdot \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \mathbf{r})}{\gamma'^2 c^2} \right\} \times (\mathbf{u}' \times \mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)) \right] dV + O(a) \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.35})$$

as  $a$  approaches zero, where  $(1/a)$  in (B.35) denotes the  $1/a$  terms.

Inserting  $\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, 0)$  from (C.1) into (B.35), noting that all odd terms integrate to zero, and extracting the  $1/a$  terms, we find

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{F}'_{ee}(0) &= \left(\frac{1}{a}\right) + \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int \int_{charge} \left[ \dot{\alpha}' \cdot \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + \frac{\gamma'}{c^2} \mathbf{u}' \times \left( \mathbf{u}' \times \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} \right) \right] d\epsilon' d\epsilon \\ &+ O(a) = \left(\frac{1}{a}\right) + \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \dot{\alpha}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\gamma'}{c^2} \mathbf{u}' \times (\mathbf{u}' \times \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) \right] + O(a)\end{aligned}\quad (B.36)$$

where we have let  $d\epsilon = \rho(\mathbf{r}, 0)dV$  and performed the double integration of the constant integrand over the charge.

With

$$\dot{\alpha}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} = \gamma' \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + (1 - \gamma') \frac{(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}})\mathbf{u}'}{u'^2} \quad (B.37a)$$

and

$$\frac{\gamma'}{c^2} \mathbf{u}' \times (\mathbf{u}' \times \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) = \frac{-\gamma' u'^2}{c^2} \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \frac{\gamma'}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}) \mathbf{u}' \quad (B.37b)$$

(B.36) can be written as

$$\mathbf{F}'_{ee}(0) = \left(\frac{1}{a}\right) + \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{\gamma'} + \left(1 - \frac{1}{\gamma'}\right) \frac{(\mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}})\mathbf{u}'}{u'^2} \right] \quad (B.38a)$$

or

$$\mathbf{F}'_{ee}(0) = \left(\frac{1}{a}\right) + \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{||} + \ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp}/\gamma' \right] + O(a). \quad (B.38b)$$

The derivatives of the acceleration,  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{||}$  and  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{\perp}$ , in the proper  $K$  frame can be expressed in terms of the velocity and its derivatives in the arbitrary  $K'$  frame by means of the relativistic transformations (A.22). Using these transformations (A.22) converts (B.38b) to

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{F}'_{ee}(t') &= \left(\frac{1}{a}\right) + \frac{e^2 \gamma'^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}') \dot{\mathbf{u}}' \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{\gamma'^2}{c^2} \left[ \mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}')^2 \right] \mathbf{u}' \right\} + O(a)\end{aligned}\quad (B.39)$$

where  $t'$  has replaced  $t' = 0$  in (B.38) since the time  $t' = 0$  could be any instant of time  $t'$ .

The order unity term in (B.39) is the radiation reaction part of the self electromagnetic force. Combining the  $1/a$  part of the self electromagnetic force in (B.19) with the radiation reaction part in (B.39) produces the total electromagnetic self force to order  $a$  in an arbitrary  $K'$  inertial reference frame

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{F}'_{ee}(t') &= \frac{-e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a c^2} \frac{d}{dt} (\gamma' \mathbf{u}') + \frac{e^2 \gamma'^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left\{ \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}') \dot{\mathbf{u}}' \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{\gamma'^2}{c^2} \left[ \mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}')^2 \right] \mathbf{u}' \right\} + O(a).\end{aligned}\quad (B.40)$$

### B.2.2 Evaluation of the radiation reaction power

To determine the  $O(1)$  terms of the self electromagnetic power in an arbitrary  $K'$  frame, begin with the charge integral in equation (3.2) at an arbitrary instant of time  $t' = 0$

$$P'_{\epsilon\ell}(0) = \int_{\text{charge}} \rho'(\mathbf{r}', 0) \mathbf{u}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) \cdot \mathbf{E}'(\mathbf{r}', 0) dV'. \quad (\text{B.41})$$

Applying the same procedure to (B.41) as we applied to (B.23) in the previous section yields instead of (B.38b)

$$P'_{\epsilon\ell}(0) = \left(\frac{1}{a}\right) + \frac{e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{||}. \quad (\text{B.42})$$

Substituting  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}_{||}$  from (A.22a) into (B.42), rearranging the expression, and replacing the arbitrary time  $t' = 0$  with  $t'$ , results in the radiation reaction power in the arbitrary  $K'$  frame

$$P'_{\epsilon\ell}(t) = \left(\frac{1}{a}\right) + \frac{e^2 \gamma'^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}')^2 \right] + O(a). \quad (\text{B.43})$$

The  $1/a$  part of the self electromagnetic power in (B.22) combines with (B.43) to give the total self electromagnetic power to order  $a$  in an arbitrary  $K'$  inertial reference frame

$$\begin{aligned} P'_{\epsilon\ell}(t) &= \frac{-e^2}{6\pi\epsilon_0 a} \frac{d}{dt'} \left( \gamma' - \frac{1}{4\gamma'} \right) \\ &\quad + \frac{e^2 \gamma'^4}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^3} \left[ \mathbf{u}' \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}' + \frac{3\gamma'^2}{c^2} (\mathbf{u}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}')^2 \right] + O(a). \end{aligned} \quad (\text{B.44})$$

This completes the derivation of the self electromagnetic force and power to order  $a$  of Lorentz's model of the electron, that is, a total charge  $e$  uniformly distributed on a spherical insulator of radius  $a$  moving without rotation with arbitrary center velocity  $\mathbf{u}'$ . To my knowledge, it is the first rigorous derivation of these results for arbitrary velocity since Schott's [13] rigorous, yet extraordinarily lengthy derivation from the Liénard-Wiechert potentials; see Chapter 3 of the main text.

## Appendix C

# ELECTRIC AND MAGNETIC FIELDS IN A SPHERICAL SHELL OF CHARGE

Consider the Lorentz model of the electron as a total charge  $e$  uniformly distributed within a thin, nonrotating, spherical shell of inner radius  $a$  and thickness  $\delta$  (see Figure 1 of the main text). In a proper inertial reference frame at rest instantaneously with the charge distribution, the velocity  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  will be zero but the acceleration and higher time derivatives of velocity are, in general, nonzero functions of space and time ( $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t)$ ,  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  ...).

In equation (A.10) of Appendix A the electric field produced by this accelerating charge in its proper frame was found to be

$$\begin{aligned}\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = & \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int_{\text{charge}} \left\{ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{R^2} + \frac{1}{2c^2 R} \left[ \frac{\mathbf{r}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{c^2} - 1 \right] [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\hat{\mathbf{R}} + \dot{\mathbf{u}}] \right. \\ & \left. + \frac{3}{8} \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}}{c^4} [(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2 - |\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2] + \frac{3(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4c^4} + \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + O(R) \right\} d\epsilon', \quad u = 0\end{aligned}\quad (\text{C.1})$$

where  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}$  and  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$  in (C.1) refer to the time derivatives of the center velocity of the charged sphere at time  $t$ . The position of the charge element  $d\epsilon'$  is designated by  $\mathbf{r}'(t)$  and the vector  $\mathbf{R}$  is defined as  $\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}'(t)$ .

We can find the magnetic field  $\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from the simple relationship between the electric and magnetic fields of a moving point charge [11]. Letting  $d\epsilon'$  be the moving point charge, and  $d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  and  $d\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  be the electric and magnetic fields of this point charge, we have

$$d\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \hat{\mathbf{R}}'(t') \times d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)/c \quad (\text{C.2})$$

where  $d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  is the integrand of (C.1) and  $\mathbf{R}'(t')$  is defined as  $\mathbf{r} - \mathbf{r}'(t')$ , the difference vector between the position  $\mathbf{r}$  of the observation point and the position  $\mathbf{r}'(t')$  of the element of charge  $d\epsilon'$  at the retarded time  $t' = t - R'/c$ . Expanding  $\hat{\mathbf{R}}'(t')$  in a power series about  $t$

and making use of (A.8) gives

$$\begin{aligned}\hat{\mathbf{R}}'(t') &= \hat{\mathbf{R}} - \frac{R}{2c^2} \left[ \frac{\mathbf{r}' \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{c^2} - 1 \right] \left[ (\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}) \hat{\mathbf{R}} - \dot{\mathbf{u}} \right] - R^2 \hat{\mathbf{R}} \left[ \frac{(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})^2}{8c^4} \right. \\ &\quad \left. + \frac{|\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2}{8c^4} + \frac{(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})}{6c^3} \right] + R^2 \left[ \frac{(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}})\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{4c^4} + \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{6c^3} \right] + O(R^3).\end{aligned}\quad (\text{C.3})$$

Substituting  $\hat{\mathbf{R}}'(t')$  from (C.3) and  $d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t)$  from the integrand of (C.1) into (C.2), one finds that most of the terms cancel leaving merely

$$d\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \left[ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}(t) \times \ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{8\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} + O(R) \right] de' \quad (\text{C.4})$$

or

$$\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{1}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \int_{\text{charge}} \left[ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}(t) \times \ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{2c^4} + O(R) \right] de', \quad u = 0 \quad (\text{C.5})$$

for the magnetic field in the proper frame.

Equations (C.1) and (C.5) can be integrated in closed form for a uniformly distributed spherical shell of charge with inner radius  $a$  and small thickness  $\delta$ . In particular, the expressions for the fields within the thin shell simplify to

$$\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{\epsilon}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \left[ \frac{r-a}{\delta a^2} \hat{\mathbf{r}} - \frac{2\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{3ac^2} + \frac{2\ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{3c^3} + \frac{4}{5c^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \cdot \left( \dot{\mathbf{u}}\dot{\mathbf{u}} - \frac{\mathbf{I}|\dot{\mathbf{u}}|^2}{3} \right) \right] + O(a) \quad (\text{C.6})$$

$$\mathbf{B}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{\epsilon}{12\pi\epsilon_0 c^4} \hat{\mathbf{r}} \times \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + O(a), \quad (\text{C.7})$$

$$u = 0, \quad (a \leq r \leq a + \delta)$$

The electric field in (C.6) agrees with the results of Sections 56 and 57 in Page and Adams [55] except for the  $4/5$  term in (C.6), which is missing in their work, because they do not take into account the variation (A.8) in acceleration of the charge with position around the shell. Also Page and Adams do not include the  $\ddot{\mathbf{u}}$  term in the magnetic field of (C.7).

## Appendix D

# DERIVATION OF THE LINEAR TERMS FOR THE SELF ELECTROMAGNETIC FORCE

Begin the derivation with the expression (A.2) for the electric field produced by the moving element of charge  $d\epsilon'$  in the shell of charge. Since we want to evaluate this expression (A.2) in a proper reference frame ( $u(\mathbf{r}, t) = 0$ ) discarding all nonlinear terms in  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}, \ddot{\mathbf{u}}, \dots$ , we see, with the help of the expansion (C.3) for  $\hat{\mathbf{R}}'(t')$ , and (A.8) and (A.13) for  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(\mathbf{r}', t')$  and  $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{r}', t')$ , that (A.2) can be simplified immediately to

$$d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{d\epsilon'}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \left[ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}} \times (\hat{\mathbf{R}} \times \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t'))}{Rc^2} + \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}' - \mathbf{u}(t')/c}{R^2(1 - \hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \mathbf{u}(t')/c)^3} \right] + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.1})$$

where, of course,  $\mathbf{R}'$  is a function of the retarded time  $t' = t - R'/c$ . Inserting the expansion

$$\left[ 1 - \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \mathbf{u}(t')}{c} \right]^{-3} = 1 + \frac{3\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \mathbf{u}(t')}{c} + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.2})$$

into (D.1) gives

$$d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) = \frac{d\epsilon'}{4\pi\epsilon_0} \left[ \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t')) - \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t')}{Rc^2} - \frac{\mathbf{u}(t')}{R^2c} + \frac{3\hat{\mathbf{R}}(\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \mathbf{u}(t'))}{R^2c} + \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}}'(t')}{R^2} \right] + \text{nonlinear terms.} \quad (\text{D.3})$$

Now

$$\mathbf{R}'(t') = \mathbf{R}(t) - \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t)}{2} \left( \frac{R'(t')}{c} \right)^2 + \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}(t)}{6} \left( \frac{R'(t')}{c} \right)^3 + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.4})$$

or with the insertion of the expansion

$$R'(t') = R \left[ 1 - \frac{\mathbf{R} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{2c^2} + \dots \right] \quad (\text{D.5})$$

(D.4) becomes

$$\mathbf{R}'(t') = \mathbf{R} - \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t)}{2} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^2 + \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}(t)}{6} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^3 + \dots + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.6})$$

that is

$$\mathbf{R}'(t') = \mathbf{R}(t - R/c) + \text{nonlinear terms}. \quad (\text{D.7})$$

Similarly,

$$\mathbf{u}(t') = \mathbf{u}(t - R/c) + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.8a})$$

$$\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t') = \dot{\mathbf{u}}(t - R/c) + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.8b})$$

and

$$R'(t') = R(t - R/c) + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.8c})$$

or

$$R'(t') = R - \dot{R} \frac{R}{c} + \frac{\ddot{R}}{2} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^2 - \frac{\dddot{R}}{6} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^3 + \dots + \text{nonlinear terms}. \quad (\text{D.8d})$$

With

$$\dot{R} = \frac{d}{dt}(\mathbf{R} \cdot \mathbf{R})^{1/2} = \frac{\mathbf{R}}{R} \cdot \frac{d\mathbf{R}}{dt} = \hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \mathbf{u} = 0 \quad (\text{D.9a})$$

$$\ddot{R} = \hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}} \quad (\text{D.9b})$$

$$\dddot{R} = \hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}} + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.9c})$$

e.g., inserted into (D.8d),  $R'(t')$  becomes

$$R'(t') = R + \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{2} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^2 - \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{6} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^3 + \dots + \text{nonlinear terms}. \quad (\text{D.10})$$

The vector  $\mathbf{R}(t - R/c)$  can also be expanded in the form

$$\mathbf{R}(t - R/c) = \mathbf{R} + \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{2} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^2 - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}(t)}{6} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^3 + \dots + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (\text{D.11})$$

which combines with (D.10) and (D.7) to give

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\mathbf{R}'(t')}{R^3(t')} &= \frac{\mathbf{R}(t - R/c)}{R^3(t')} = \frac{\mathbf{R}}{R^3} \left[ 1 - \frac{3}{R} \left( \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \dot{\mathbf{u}}}{2} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^2 - \frac{\hat{\mathbf{R}} \cdot \ddot{\mathbf{u}}}{6} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^3 + \dots \right) \right] \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{R^3} \left[ \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}}{2} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^2 - \frac{\ddot{\mathbf{u}}(t)}{6} \left( \frac{R}{c} \right)^3 + \dots \right] + \text{nonlinear terms}. \end{aligned} \quad (\text{D.12})$$

When we substitute (D.8a), (D.8b) and (D.12) into (D.3), integrate over  $d\epsilon'$ , then multiply by  $de = \rho dV$  and integrate over  $de$  to get the total self electromagnetic force, we are left with integrals of the form [14]

$$\int \int_{sphere} R^m de' de = 3 \int \int_{sphere} \frac{x^2}{R^2} R^m de' de = \frac{2^{m+1}}{m+2} a^m \epsilon^2, \\ m = -1, 0, 1, 2, \dots . \quad (D.13)$$

We see from (D.13) applied to (D.12) that

$$\int \int_{sphere} \frac{\mathbf{R}'(t')}{R^3(t')} de' de = 0 + \text{nonlinear terms.} \quad (D.14a)$$

Similarly, from (D.13) applied to the  $\mathbf{u}(t')$  part of (D.3)

$$\int \int_{sphere} \frac{\mathbf{u}'(t')}{R^2} \cdot [\hat{\mathbf{R}}\hat{\mathbf{R}} - \mathbf{I}] de' de = 0 + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (D.14b)$$

and from (D.13) applied to the  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t')$  part of (D.3)

$$\int \int_{sphere} \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t')}{R} \cdot [\hat{\mathbf{R}}\hat{\mathbf{R}} - \mathbf{I}] de' de = -\frac{2}{3} \int \int_{sphere} \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t - R/c)}{R} de' de \\ + \text{nonlinear terms.} \quad (D.14c)$$

Thus, integrating (D.3) over  $d\epsilon'$  and  $de$  and using (D.14) shows that the exact expression for the total self electromagnetic force on the charge can be written simply as

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \int \int_{sphere} d\mathbf{E}(\mathbf{r}, t) de = -\frac{1}{6\pi\epsilon_0 c^2} \int \int_{sphere} \frac{\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t - R/c)}{R} de' de \\ + \text{nonlinear terms.} \quad (D.15)$$

Since  $\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t - R/c)$  can be expanded in the power series

$$\dot{\mathbf{u}}(t - R/c) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n!} \frac{d^{n+1}\mathbf{u}(t)}{dt^{n+1}} \left( \frac{-R}{c} \right)^n \quad (D.16)$$

substituting (D.16) into (D.15) and applying the integrals (D.13) yields

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \frac{e^2}{12\pi\epsilon_0 a^2 c} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left( \frac{-2a}{c} \right)^{n+1} \frac{1}{(n+1)!} \frac{d^{n+1}\mathbf{u}(t)}{dt^{n+1}} + \text{nonlinear terms} \quad (D.17)$$

or

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \frac{e^2}{12\pi\epsilon_0 a^2 c} \mathbf{u}(t - 2a/c) + \text{nonlinear terms, } u(t) = 0 \quad (D.18)$$

or for small velocity

$$\mathbf{F}_{el}(t) = \frac{e^2}{12\pi\epsilon_0 a^2 c} [\mathbf{u}(t - 2a/c) - \mathbf{u}(t)] + \text{nonlinear terms}, \quad \frac{u^2}{c^2} \ll 1. \quad (\text{D.19})$$

The result (D.18) was stated without proof by Page [14]. It can also be obtained from the first series of a general expression for the self electromagnetic force, on a nonrelativistically rigid charged sphere, that was derived by Schott [49]. The linear part of the self electromagnetic force (D.19) is the same for both relativistically and nonrelativistically rigid spheres.

# References

- [1] Lorentz, H.A., La theorie electromagnetique de Maxwell et son application aux corps mouvants, *Archives Néerlandaises des Sciences Exactes et Naturelles*, **25**, pp. 363-552, 1892.
- [2] Abraham, M., *Theorie der Elektrizität, Vol II: Elektromagnetische Theorie der Strahlung*, Leipzig: Teubner, 1905.
- [3] Lorentz, H.A., *The Theory of Electrons*, Leipzig: Teubner, 1909 (2nd edition, 1916).
- [4] Einstein, A., On the electrodynamics of moving bodies, *Annalen der Physik*, **17**, pp. 891-921, 1905; translation in *The Principle of Relativity*, New York: Dover, 1952.
- [5] Einstein, A., Does the inertia of a body depend upon its energy content? *Annalen der Physik*, **18**, pp. 639-641, 1905; translation in *The Principle of Relativity*, New York: Dover, 1952.
- [6] Pauli, W., Relativitätstheorie, *Encyklopädie der Matematischen Wissenschaften*, **V19**, pp. 543-775, 1921; translated as *Theory of Relativity*, New York: Pergamon, 1958.
- [7] The second edition (1908) of Abraham's book added to the first edition [2] a discussion of the theory of relativity and a section 49 in which he mentions the 4/3 factor.
- [8] Abraham, M., Die Grundhypotesen der Elektronentheorie, *Physikalische Zeitschrift*, **5**, pp. 576-579, 1904.
- [9] Lorentz, H.A., Electromagnetic phenomena in a system moving with any velocity less than that of light, *Proceedings of the Academy of Sciences of Amsterdam*, **6**, pp. 809-831, 1904; contained in *The Principle of Relativity*, New York: Dover, 1952.
- [10] Dirac, P.A.M., Classical theory of radiating electrons, *Proc. Roy. Soc. Lond.*, **A167**, pp. 148-169, 1938.
- [11] Panofsky, W.K.H. and Phillips, M., *Classical Electricity and Magnetism*, 2nd edition, Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1962.
- [12] Stratton, J.A., *Electromagnetic Theory*, New York: McGraw-Hill, 1941.

- [13] Schott, G.A., *Electromagnetic Radiation*, Cambridge University Press, 1912, ch. 11 and appendix D.
- [14] Page, L., Is a moving mass retarded by the reaction of its own radiation? *Phys. Review*, **11**, pp. 377-400, 1918.
- [15] (a) Laue, M., Die Wellenstrahlung einer bewegten Punktladung nach dem Relativitatsprinzip, *Annalen der Physik*, **28**, pp. 436-442, 1909. Also see (b) Podolsky, B. and Kunz, K.S., *Fundamentals of Electrodynamics*, New York: Marcel Dekker, 1969, sec. 25.
- [16] Poincaré, H., On the dynamics of the electron, *Rendiconti del Circolo Matematico di Palermo*, **21**, pp. 129-176, 1906; translated by Scientific Translation Service, Ann Arbor, MI.
- [17] Arnowitt, R., Deser, S. and Misner, C.W., Gravitational-electromagnetic coupling and the classical self-energy problem, *Phys. Review*, **120**, pp. 313-320, 1960.
- [18] Yaghjian, A.D., A classical electro-gravitational model of a point charge with finite mass, *Proc. URSI Symp. on Electromagnetic Theory*, pp. 322-324, 1989.
- [19] Planck, M., Das Prinzip der Relativität und die Grundgleichungen der Mechanik, *Deutschen Physikalischen Gesellschaft*, **8**, pp. 136-141, 1906.
- [20] Schwinger, J., Electromagnetic mass revisited, *Foundations of Physics*, **13**, pp. 373-383, 1983.
- [21] Bhabha, H.J., Classical theory of electrons, *Proc. Indian Acad. Sci.*, **A10**, pp. 324-332, 1939.
- [22] Kaufmann, W., Series of papers in *Nachr. K. Ges. Wiss. Goettingen*, (2), pp. 143-155, 1901; (5), pp. 291-296, 1902; (3), pp. 90-103, 1903; and *Physikalische Zeitschrift*, **4**, pp. 54-57, 1902; and *Sitzungsber. K. Preuss. Akad. Wiss.*, **2**, pp. 949-956, 1905; and *Annalen der Physik*, **19**, pp. 487-553, 1906.
- [23] Cushing, J.T., Electromagnetic mass, relativity, and the Kaufmann experiments, *Am. J. Phys.*, **49**, pp. 1133-1149, 1981.
- [24] Bucherer, A.H., Die experimentelle Bestatigung des Relativitätsprinzips, *Annalen der Physik*, **28**, pp. 513-536, 1909.
- [25] Neumann, G., Die träge Masse schnell bewegter Elektronen, *Annalen der Physik*, **45**, pp. 529-579, 1914.
- [26] Bohr, N., On the decrease of velocity of swiftly moving electrified particles in passing through matter, *Phil. Mag.*, **30**, pp. 581-612, 1915.

- [27] Richardson, O.W., *The Electron Theory of Matter*, 2nd Edition, Cambridge University Press, 1916.
- [28] Cunningham, E., *The Principle of Relativity*, Cambridge University Press, 1911
- [29] Rohrlich, F., *Classical Charged Particles*, Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley, 1965 (2nd edition 1990).
- [30] Fermi, E., Über einen Widerspruch zwischen der elektrodynamischen und der relativistischen Theorie der elektromagnetischen Masse, *Physikalische Zeitschrift*, **23**, pp. 340-344, 1922.
- [31] Jackson, J.D., *Classical Electrodynamics*, 2nd Edition, New York: Wiley, 1975, ch. 17.
- [32] Larmor, J., On the theory of the magnetic influence on spectra; and on the radiation from moving ions, *Phil. Mag.*, **44**, 5th Series, pp. 503-512, 1897; also in Larmor's book, *Aether and Matter*, Cambridge University Press, 1900, ch. 14, subsection 150.
- [33] Schott, G.A., On the motion of the Lorentz electron, *Phil. Mag.*, **29**, pp. 49-62, 1915.
- [34] Herglotz, G., Zur Elektronentheorie, *Nachr. K. Ges. Wiss. Goettingen*, (6), pp. 357-382, 1903.
- [35] Wildermuth, K., Zur physikalischen Interpretation der Elektronenselbstbeschleunigung, *Zeitschrift Fuer Naturforschung*, **10a**, pp. 450-459, 1955.
- [36] Erber, T., The classical theories of radiation reaction, *Fortschritte der Physik*, **9**, 343-392, 1961.
- [37] Pearle, P., Classical electron models, ch. 7 in *Electromagnetism: Paths to Research*, D. Teplitz, Ed., New York: Plenum, 1982.
- [38] Moniz, E.J. and Sharp, D.H., Radiation reaction in nonrelativistic quantum electrodynamics, *Phys. Review D*, **15**, pp. 2850-2865, 1977; see also Grotch, H., Kazes, E., Rohrlich, F. and Sharp, D.H., Internal retardation, *Acta Physica Austriaca*, **54**, pp. 31-38, 1982.
- [39] Hertz, P., Über Energie und Impuls der Roentgenstrahlen, *Physikalische Zeitschrift*, **4**, pp. 848-852, 1903.
- [40] Sommerfeld, A., Simplified deduction of the field and the forces of an electron moving in any given way, *Akad. van Wetensch. te Amsterdam*, **13**, 1904 (English translation, **7**, pp. 346-367, 1905).
- [41] Plass, G.N., Classical electrodynamic equations of motion with radiative reaction, *Reviews of Modern Physics*, **33**, pp. 37-62, 1961.

- [42] Shen, C.S., Magnetic bremsstrahlung in an intense magnetic field, *Phys. Review D*, **6**, pp. 2736-2754, 1972.
- [43] Schwinger, J., On the classical radiation of accelerated electrons, *Phys. Review*, **75**, pp. 1912-1925, 1949.
- [44] Eliezer, C.J., A note on electron theory, *Proc. Camb. Phil. Soc.*, **46**, pp. 199-201, 1950.
- [45] Caldiroli, P., A new model of classical electron, *Nuovo Cimento*, **3**, Supplemento 2, pp. 297-342, 1956.
- [46] Mo, T.C., and Papas, C.H., New equation of motion for classical charged particles, *Phys. Review D*, **4**, pp. 3566-3571, 1971.
- [47] Bonnor, W.B., A new equation of motion for a radiating charged particle, *Proc. Roy. Soc. Lond.*, **A337**, pp. 591-597, 1974.
- [48] Marx, E., Electromagnetic energy and momentum from a charged particle, *International J. of Theoretical Physics*, **14**, pp. 55-65, 1975.
- [49] Schott, G.A., The theory of the linear electric oscillator and its bearing on the electron theory, *Phil. Mag.*, **3**, pp. 739-752, 1927.
- [50] Schott, G.A., The electromagnetic field of a moving uniformly and rigidly electrified sphere and its radiationless orbits, *Phil. Mag.*, **15**, 1933; and The uniform circular motion with invariable normal spin of a rigidly and uniformly electrified sphere, IV, *Proc. Roy. Soc. Lond.*, **A159**, pp. 570-591, 1937.
- [51] Bohm, D., and Weinstein, M., The self-oscillations of a charged particle, *Phys. Review*, **74**, pp. 1789-1798, 1948.
- [52] Pearle, P., Absence of radiationless motions of relativistically rigid classical electron, *Foundations of Physics*, **7**, pp. 931-945, 1977.
- [53] Shen, C.S., Comment on the 'new' equation of motion for classical charged particles, *Phys. Review D*, **6**, pp. 3039-3040, 1972; and Radiation and acceleration of a relativistic charged particle in an electromagnetic field, *Phys. Review D*, **17**, pp. 434-445, 1978.
- [54] Dirac, P.A.M., A new classical theory of electrons, *Proc. Roy. Soc. Lond.*, **A209**, pp. 291-296, 1951.
- [55] Page, L., and Adams, N.L., Jr., *Electrodynamics*, New York: D. Van Nostrand, 1940.
- [56] Pais, A., The early history of the theory of the electron: 1897-1947, ch. 5 in *Aspects of Quantum Theory*, A. Salam and E.P. Wigner, Eds., Cambridge University Press, 1972.
- [57] Coleman, S., Classical electron theory from a modern standpoint, ch. 6 in *Electromagnetism: Paths to Research*, D. Teplitz, Ed., New York: Plenum, 1982.

**MISSION  
OF  
ROME LABORATORY**

Rome Laboratory plans and executes an interdisciplinary program in research, development, test, and technology transition in support of Air Force Command, Control, Communications and Intelligence ( $C^3I$ ) activities for all Air Force platforms. It also executes selected acquisition programs in several areas of expertise. Technical and engineering support within areas of competence is provided to ESD Program Offices (POs) and other ESD elements to perform effective acquisition of  $C^3I$  systems. In addition, Rome Laboratory's technology supports other AFSC Product Divisions, the Air Force user community, and other DOD and non-DOD agencies. Rome Laboratory maintains technical competence and research programs in areas including, but not limited to, communications, command and control, battle management, intelligence information processing, computational sciences and software producibility, wide area surveillance/sensors, signal processing, solid state sciences, photonics, electromagnetic technology, superconductivity, and electronic reliability/maintainability and testability.